THE HISTORY OF THE LIFE, And SURPRIZING ADVENTURES OF SIGNOR *ROZELLI*, Of the HAGUE.

Giving a particular Account of his Birth, Education, Slavery, Monastic State, Imprisonment in the Inquisition at *Rome*, and the different Figures he has since made, as well in *Italy*, as in *England*, *France* and *Holland*.

Written by Himself, just before his Decease.

The Whole being a Series of the most diverting History, and surprizing Events ever yet made public.

Translated from the last *French* Edition, by Monsieur *D'CLUE*.

LONDON:
Printed in the Year M.DCC.XLII.

THE LIFE And SURPRIZING ADVENTURES OF SIGNOR *ROZELLI.*

Of my BIRTH.

IT was not the itch of being dubb'd an author, that induced me to publish the most material passages of my life. Those who have known me in Italy by the name of Colli, and in France and Holland by that of Rozelli, or Lucius Azor, will, I dare say, do me the justice to believe me capable of nobler and more serious exercises, than that of writing the

hiſtory of my own life. A man, whoſe profeſſion has ever been the moſt ſublime ſciences, can't be thought to reliſh works of this nature; and my readers may aſſure themſelves, I always held it for a maxim, "Not to divert poſterity at the expence of my own crimes." For, beſides that the pride which men take in ſuch trifles, is very ridiculous, and unworthy a man of ſenſe, the public, to whom they ſo generouſly preſent a catalogue of their good and ill actions, are mighty capricious and ſevere in judging of thoſe of other men, and generally condemn the writers of the lives of gentlemen, as ſo many cheats, who unjuſtly charge perſons of worth and honour with their own enormities; or, as wretches provok'd, by a ſenſe of their misfortunes, to rail at all thoſe, who they pretend, have been the principal occaſion thereof.

Theſe conſiderations always gave me the greateſt averſion for ſuch an undertaking; and I ſhould certainly have perſiſted in my reſolution, never thus to expoſe myſelf, had not a perſon, who is no ſtranger to the chief adventures of my life, frankly told me, one day, that if I would not oblige the world with a recital of 'em, he would try what he could do: but the apprehenſions this gave me, that in ſuch a caſe, the truth might receive ſome prejudice, and

that

that in describing my misfortunes, their cause might be dissembled, and the circumstances mangled, soon chang'd my sentiment; wherefore I determin'd to set pen to paper, and to endeavour, by a faithful relation of the sad disasters that have befallen me, to convince all the world, how much it concerns them to behave themselves discreetly and prudently in their several stations.

I am descended, on the father's side, of one of the noblest families of Naples, as having given several cardinals to the church, and two great masters to the religion of Malta. My birth was a mystery, in which love had the only share. My mother was a Grecian beauty, enslav'd with a sultaness, formerly Ibrahim's favourite, and mother of the late grand signor Mustapha; who, in a pilgrimage to Mecca, was intercepted by the gallies of Malta, on board of which my father then commanded in the quality of lieutenant. As the zeal with which the gentlemen of the order of Maltha are fir'd, transports them beyond the rules of order and respect, my father was one of the first that boarded the ship which carry'd that illustrious pilgrim; and the shrieks of the ladies in the captain's cabbin soon drew him thither, with some other officers, who left the deck crowded with moors and slaves.

Nor

Nor ſooner did they behold the beauties of their new captives, than their martial fire abated, and pity fill'd their breaſts. Having therefore, given the neceſſary orders in the ſhip, and remov'd the ſultaneſs, with her women, and ſome eunuchs to wait on her, aboard their Capitana, they ſet ſail for Malta, where they arriv'd, with their prize, two days after. This is all I have been able to learn of the hiſtory, which does, in ſome manner, give birth to my own. For, my father, who was as gallant a gentleman as any of his time, having fix'd his eye on a young Grecian, who had been wounded in her hand, the ſweetneſs of her features, and the tenderneſs of her complaints, made him ſo careful of her, during the voyage, that it was plain he was no longer maſter of his heart.

I ſhall not here relate all the particulars of an intrigue that was known all over Naples and Sicily, where the chevalier was then extremely belov'd, his genius and politeneſs being a ſtandard for all the young gentlemen of thoſe kingdoms, the famous Marini, one of the greateſt poets that ever Italy could boaſt of, addreſs'd him in moſt of his amorous verſes; and there was not a lady in the viceroy's court, but had form'd ſome deſign of gaining the admiration

tion of ſo accompliſh'd a perſon as the chevalier, my father, was.

But Zebina, the Grecian ſlave, of whom he had made a preſent to his old miſtreſs the counteſs of P——, had ſo great a ſhare in his thoughts, that he ſlighted all the advances made to him by others of the fair ſex, upon ſeveral occaſions. 'Tis true, I ought not to amuſe my readers with the account of his tragical life; but I cannot forbear touching upon my father's adventures, which are an introduction to my own; and beſides, it may not be amiſs to give you the particulars of an amour, of which I am the fruit, and which bears ſo ſtrict a relation to my life.

Zebina was admir'd by the counteſs of P——, for her excellent beauty, her refin'd wit, and her judgment too great for her tender years: but ſuch were her ſentiments of our religion, that all attempts prov'd unſucceſsful, to reconcile her to the chriſtian faith. She ſaid, ſhe felt a paſſion that ſtrongly oppos'd it; and that it would have been much eaſier to convert her in Conſtantinople, than in Naples, where people talk'd ſo contrary to what they believ'd.

This reſervedneſs of the ſlave, made her cenſure every the leaſt diverſion of her miſtreſs, who thinking to gain her over by good example, had order'd, that nothing

ſhould

ſhould be done in the houſe, that might give offence to Zebina. Of which when the counteſs of P—— was ſpeaking, one day to the chevalier, he took upon him to deſire her not to preſs Zebina as to that article; and upon her coming into the room where he was, he betray'd ſome diſorder: Zebina alſo ſhew'd an emotion that was not at all agreeable to the counteſs; who could not forbear telling the chevalier, before he went, that ſhe had obſerv'd his concern.

The counteſs of P——'s was one of the greateſt families of Naples, but had ſo decay'd, that the counteſs, when ſcarce 20 years of age, was oblig'd for intereſt, to marry the count of P——, of 70; who was very rich, and an intimate friend of the chevalier C——'s. But his age was of ſo much the more dangerous conſequence, in that, before her marriage, the counteſs had a particular reſpect for the chevalier C——, which ſhe continu'd after it. Nor was he leſs pleas'd with her, than ſhe with him; and yet the old count little thought he was made ſuch a fool of by his lady and his friend.

Their intrigue was ſo well manag'd, that it took not the leaſt air; but, till Zebina's coming, the lovers had enjoy'd the utmoſt of their wiſhes, without either the leaſt jangling or jealouſy to diſturb their felicity.

But

But it is moſt certain, that no man is always happy. The counteſs who lov'd the chevalier very paſſionately, was aware of his inconſtancy, when he little thought of her jealouſy; and would often make the ſlave come into her apartment with the chevalier, on purpoſe to obſerve the emotion of the one, and confuſion of the other: Uſing, now and then, out of ſpite, the dangerous proof of leaving 'em alone, to liſten what they ſaid, and be an eye-witneſs of their diſorder. But, at laſt, being reſolved to put the matter beyond all doubt, ſhe took the following method to ſatisfy herſelf of the inconſtancy of her gallant.

One day, when the vice-roy made an entertainment for the ladies, the counteſs pretends herſelf ſick; and, being put to bed, orders her women to leave her alone, and ſay ſhe was gone to court. Zebina and the chevalier, who knew nothing of the counteſs's feint, but thought ſhe was far enough off, reſolv'd, for their part, not to loſe ſo fair an opportunity of enjoying each other a few minutes. I am not writing a romance, and ſo ſhall not pretend to tell you the paſſionate expreſſions of the two moſt amorous lovers that ever deſerv'd the name. All that I could learn of the perſon that brought me up, is, That I was the end of that interview; and that, from that time, Zebina

never had an opportunity of being alone with the chevalier. The countess, who had been almost a witness of their union, would not complain to her gallant of his inconstancy, by reason she knew his fiery temper was ripe for enterprize; and still pretended so much kindness to her slave, that she could not part with her out of her sight. Zebina knew all her affairs, except those of her heart; and the chevalier visited the countess as often as ever, but was never able to get a moment of Zebina's company.

The countess resolving to be even with the lovers, and finding her jealousy increase as fast as the chevalier's passion for her cool'd, study'd means to ruin 'em both, without the expence of her honour, which was the only thing she valued. The Italians are cautious, and dangerous in their designs of revenge, and can hide their resentment beyond death itself; as you may see by what befel the chevalier.

The countess was seized with a kind of melancholy, which so alter'd her, that one could scarce know her again. Her spouse, who perfectly doated on her, endeavour'd all he could to divert her, and fetch her out of her drooping condition; but all in vain. Neither the buffoonry of merry-andrews (which is very much admir'd in Italy) nor the most exquisite remedies of the best physicians,

ſicians prevail'd. She became a ſtranger to joy, and pined away in ſuch a manner, that her decay was viſible. All the ſervants in the houſe lamented her, and there's ne'er a ſaint in paradiſe but was pray'd to for the life and health of ſo lovely a perſon. But all in vain! The time of her departure was come; her ſtrength was waſted; and ſhe now perceived, when 'twas too late, that ſhe had abandoned herſelf too much to her paſſion, or been too reſolute in concealing it. But before ſhe expir'd, the count, who, as I ſaid before, loved her even to madneſs, came and made her the moſt tender and obliging proteſtations of his concern. He gave her liberty to do what ſhe would to ſave her life; and offered, a hundred times over, to lay down his own, if he could but thereby prolong her days. The counteſs liſtened to all theſe exaggerations, but was more concerned for the cauſe of her misfortunes than for her husband's grief. She deſired nothing but to parley a few moments with the chevalier, before ſhe died: Wherefore, pretending ſhe wanted reſt, ſhe deſired to be left alone with Zebina, whom ſhe ordered to acquaint the chevalier with her condition.

The chevalier, not having yet loſt all ſenſe of his former love for the counteſs, to whom he had been ſo much obliged, was ex-

extremely concerned to hear of her illness, and made all the haste he could to her apartment; where he was no sooner arrived, but the miserable condition to which the countess was reduced, made him say a thousand pretty things to her, even tho' Zebina, who was then past making reflections, was present. The countess listen'd to him a long while, without making him any answer; but, at last, fixing her eyes wishfully upon him, Cease, chevalier, (says she, in a languishing tone) I am dying; and you are the cause of my death! At that very moment they came to tell my lady, that the count was bringing one of her relations, and the cardinal archbishop of Naples, to see her: Whereupon she desired Zebina to go and meet the company, while she secured her honour, by contriving the chevalier's escape. No sooner, therefore, was Zebina gone out of the room, but the countess intreated the chevalier not to take it amiss, but to get into a great chest that stood by her bed side, and there lie still. The chevalier readily obeyed; and the very moment that the company left the room, the countess bid Zebina lock the chest, and give her the key. Zebina, being absent when the chevalier hid himself, presently supposed, finding he did not appear, that the countess had conveyed him out of window, by the help

help of a rope-ladder, which ſhe kept for ſuch occaſions in her cloſet; and ſhe was confirmed in this opinion by the counteſs's recommending to her, with an air of confidence, to take care of the chevalier's life; aſſuring her, ſhe ſhould die contentedly, if ſhe would but promiſe to adminiſter all the comfort ſhe could to the chevalier, who, I believe, ſaid ſhe, will hardly ſurvive my death. The poor ſlave was drown'd in tears at ſuch expreſſions, and made her no other anſwer than by a ſilence, which any but a rival would have taken for a mark of the deepeſt ſorrow. But the counteſs knew too well what had paſs'd between the two lovers; and that which would have afforded her comfort at another time, help'd now to weaken her; ſo that her diſtemper increas'd more and more upon her, and ſhe fell into a ſwoon. Hereupon her women skreaming out, alarmed the whole family, who ran to her apartment, to know what was the matter. Thither alſo the old count hurry'd, in the greateſt diſorder imaginable, and ſaid and did enough to excite compaſſion in thoſe that were about him, all the while embracing his lady,, whom he believed to be dead. But at laſt, coming to herſelf again, ſhe deſired her ſpouſe to order every one to quit the room, which done, ſhe thus ſpoke to him:

My

"My Lord, the hour is now come that we muſt part, and he that made me happy in joining us, is pleaſed to take me hence, and ſend me to wait for you in the other world. I feel that I am not many moments from that terrible time; and ſo, recommending our daughter to your eſpecial care, I deſire you to think now and then of a wife who thought it her ſole happineſs to love and pleaſe you. I have but one favour to ask of you; and therefore hope you will, by granting it, let me go to the grave with content."

The afflicted count, as ſoon as his tears would permit him, aſſured her, that ſhe might demand what ſhe would; that her will ſhould be ſacred to him; and, that whatever ſhe deſired, ſhould be punctually performed.——"'Tis enough, anſwer'd ſhe, and I an content to die: Your generous proteſtation ſoftens, in ſome meaſure, the parting with ſo dear a husband! Then—I have put, ſaid ſhe, with a very low voice, into the great cheſt that ſtands here by the bedſide, a few trifles which I don't care ſhould be ſeen; werefore I entreat you, my lord, that as ſoon as I am dead, you'd pleaſe to order my coffin to be nail'd upon that cheſt, without opening it, and ſo bury both together in the ſame grave. I ſhould lay no ſtreſs, my lord, added ſhe, on the promiſes

of

of any other ſpouſe but you, but depart in pain for the curioſity ſo natural to all mankind: But I know your punctuality too well, and have experienced the goodneſs and uprightneſs of your heart, above theſe ten years." Immediately after, the unfortunate counteſs fell into an agony, and ex-expir'd about two o'clock in the morning, in *Zebina*'s arms. I ſhall but juſt touch upon the grief which ſeiz'd the whole family upon the loſs of ſo amiable a perſon. The funeral pomp was a ſight which ſurprized all that ſaw it; and people might judge of the count's love, by the prodigious charge which he was at, to honour the memory of his deceaſed lady. The funeral, at which all the perſons of diſtinction that were in town, and a numerons train of clergy aſſiſted, proceeded to the great brothers, or cordeliers, which is the *P*——*s* burying place, and the corps was depoſited in the church about ten o'clock at night, but not laid in the vault, by reaſon every body retir'd to aſſiſt at the ſervice upon that ſolemn occaſion; it being the Italians cuſtom, never to bury their dead before the next morning after the celebration of the holy myſteries.

Zebina being by this time recover'd of her concern for the counteſs's death, thought of nothing but the chevalier, who did not make his appearance. Her great belly made her

her desperate; and she resolv'd to get out of the count's house, for fear of being disgrac'd, if her crime should be discover'd. She employ'd several persons to get news of her gallant; but in vain: the chevalier C. was not to be heard of; and this put her into a dreadful consternation! but, as lovers wits are generally in better tune than indifferent persons, Zebina began to reflect upon the steps her lady had taken, the grounds of her melancholy, and especially the last actions of her life, and at last concluded she had lost her gallant.

She was confirm'd in this opinion, when she observ'd the great chest, of which her lady had call'd for the key, was gone; and fancy'd, that either out of revenge or excess of love, the countess had caus'd the chevalier to be bury'd with her. She made no more ado, therefore; but tho' it was very late, stole out of the house, cross'd the town, and arriving at the convent where the corps had been carried that evening, call'd to the porter, and told him, that she must speak with the sexton about some business of great importance, which would admit of no loss of time. As soon as the sexton appear'd, Zebina peeping upon him from under her mantle, which perfectly hid her, and which is a great fashion among the women of Naples; father, said she, I am come to trust

you

with the greateſt ſecret in the world; but you muſt be diſcreet and pru'ent: ſhew me the way to your church, and ſee that we be there alone: the affair which I am going to communicate to you, requires no witneſs; time's precious, and every moment we loſe, ſhortens the days of the moſt accompliſh'd and amiable gentleman in the world. The ſexton amaz'd at this kind of language, knew not what to think on't; but being prevail'd upon by Zebina's importunity, he convey'd her into the convent, unſeen by any body; and having conducted her into the church, was ſurpriz'd to ſee her run to the counteſs of P-----'s coffin, and call the chevalier C. But if you had ſeen the fright he was in, when he heard one anſwer from the bottom of that coffin, with a faint voice, which was but juſt audible! the friar took it to be the counteſs's ſoul, complaining of the diſturbance they had given its aſhes. For God's ſake, let's go, ſaid he, trembling, for fear a judgment overtake our rathneſs: let us leave the dead to themſelves, poor ſouls, and get away as faſt as we can. Ah father! cry'd the unfortunate Zebina, I'd rather undergo a thouſand deaths, than abandon my enterprize: The chevalier C— is ſhut up in this cheſt: His dying voice makes me tremble for his life: Help me, therefore, dear father, and let us uſe all ex-

pedition to get him out. You ſhall be well rewarded for your trouble, and nobody ſhall ever know what paſſes between you and me. The ſexton, moved by the tears of ſo lovely a perſon, and the hopes of recompence together, ran to fetch the tools neceſſary to open the cheſt; which when he had effected, Zebina found her lover in ſo dangerous a condition, that ſhe could not ſuſtain herſelf, but fainted away. However, as ſtrength and vigilance were extremely neceſſary for her in that place, her fit was but ſhort; and going to help the chevalier, whom they had taken out of the cheſt, and laid on the floor, to give him breath, ſhe found the air had overcome him, and that he was quite dead. They try'd all the ways they could to fetch him; but all in vain, and Zebina was loaded with deſpair; ſo that the beſt ſhe and the ſexton could do, was to put the chevalier's corps into the cheſt again, and pray for the repoſe of his ſoul.

Zebina was ſeiz'd with ſo great and ſenſible a ſorrow, that ſhe begg'd of the ſexton not to forſake her. Ah; dear father, ſaid ſhe, "Carry me into ſome by-part of your houſe; for day approaches, and if I ſhould be ſeen to go out of this place, it might bring you into trouble: It will be much eaſier for you to get me away in the even-

ing

ing, than now. Besides, I want to give you some information concerning me: I have so much confidence in you, that I promise myself great help and comfort from your good advice; and you may, hereafter, have occasion to rejoice, that you did not deny me this favour."

How powerful are the sighs and tears of a lovely woman! and what heart of flint can refuse to assist one that describes her affliction with a thousand charms and graces! The good father granted all she desired; and notwithstanding the extreme hazard to which he exposed himself, if it should have been known that he had brought a girl into the monastery, and he resolved to cancel, for once, the ties of his duty, and to do all he could to relieve Zebina. For this purpose he conducted her into a by-place, in which nothing but old ornaments of the altars, and the wood and wine for the vestry were kept. Zebina was no sooner sat down but she gave the reins to her passion; and feeling herself press'd by the pains of childbirth, as soon as her sighs and tears would permit her, she said, with a voice faultring with trouble and confusion, "Dear father, I am dying, and feel very perfectly, that I can no longer survive the loss I have sustained. The chevalier C—— is dead! To what purpose should I live? The poor infant

fant that is now ſtruggling to leave my womb, will one day learn of you, that he ſtole the life of the fineſt man in the world; and that his mother, though of a religion contrary to the chriſtians, had nothing elſe of baſe, but her misfortunes and her ſlavery. If he lives, let him know too, I conjure you, the pains I have endured for him; leſt he ſhould live, and not know how much he has coſt me."

The diſorder and confuſion this put the poor ſexton in, is inexpreſſible! He found himſelf obliged to do the office of a midwife, and alone, without help or experience, between a woman in agonies, and a little infant that would certainly cry out, as ſoon as 'twas born.

Under theſe unhappy circumſtances he thought he ſhould have died himſelf with confuſion. But men have generally quicker wits than the fair ſex, and know ſooner how to get rid of a bad bargain. The ſexton therefore, conſidering that it was not now time to be fearful, and to dally with the matter, ran to a brother-in-law of his, who was a ſurgeon in the town, and deſir'd him to extricate him out of the greateſt dangers he ever knew in his life. They made all poſſible haſte back to Zebina; but before they came, ſhe had loſt ſo much blood, that ſhe was ſpeechleſs; and the little infant, which

lay ſprawling upon his unfortunate mother's mantle, was ſo hoarſe, that they could ſcarce hear him cry. The ſexton and his brother uſed all poſſible endeavour to revive both thoſe unhappy objects; and having brought the infant to himſelf, by holding him to the fire, and the application of ſome liquors, he no ſooner opened his eyes, but he held out his little hand towards the ſexton's neck, who kept warming him upon his knees, while the ſurgeon was taking care of his mother: whereupon they nam'd him Colli, which ſignifies tender and careſſing. And here begins my hiſtory.

The former Part of my Life.

I Am the unfortunate Colli, whoſe conception coſt my father his life, and who in coming into the world, tore my unhappy mother in pieces; as if heaven had dated my misfortunes from the very ſource of my being. I beg the readers pardon for the faults they may find in this book; for beſides that I am full of grief and trouble at the writing of it, I publiſh it in French, which I don't pretend to underſtand ſo well as Italian; and ſo have been obliged to make uſe of a tranſlation. They will not find all places alike diverting; becauſe 'tis impoſſible for a tranſlation to come up with the

the original for life and ſpirit; eſpecially, where the two languages are ſo different in their manner of relating matters of fact. But I have ſtuck cloſe to the truth, without ſhamming it any place; neither regarding the cenſures of the world, nor fearing the powers eccleſiaſtical or ſecular, that have been concerned in my adventures. All that I propoſe to myſelf, by writing in this manner, is, Firſt, To teach men, by my example, never to depend on the promiſes of great perſonages; and, Second, To ſatisfy, in ſome meaſure, a little itch of revenge, upon ſome certain perſons, of whom one dare not ſpeak the truth, but in ſuch a place as this, where men are free; for, in all the other countries that I have been in, I found that the people were ſlaves either to flattery, or to their religion.

The ſurgeon who aſſiſted me at my birth, having wrapt me up in ſome clouts, which his brother gave him, endeavour'd to reſtore my mother to life; but with ſo bad ſucceſs, that, after all the applications his art ſuggeſted to him upon ſuch occaſions, he told the ſexton, they muſt e'en bury the dead body; for, that if they ſhould diſcover ſuch an accident, it might bring them both into danger. Having, therefore, ſet their heads together, they reſolved to dig a grave in the ſame place, where there was

a heap of vine-twigs. Accordingly, having bury'd the unhappy Zebina, they fill'd up the grave again with the vine-twigs, clean'd the place, and took ſuch precautions, that nobody ever knew any thing of the matter.

At nine of the clock, when the proceſſion for the counteſs arriv'd at the church, and every body was intent upon the ſight, the ſurgeon took me under his cloak, and carry'd me home, without the leaſt notice taken of him in the ſtreets. His wife gave me but a cold reception at firſt; being jealous, as ſhe afterwards confeſs'd, that it was a by-blow of her husbands; and ſhe would by no means be reconcil'd to me, till the ſurgeon aſſur'd her, I was a child of quality; that his brother the cordelier (who was the ſexton) help'd him to me, from a certain prince in town; that it was a ſecret of conſcience for his brother, and a ſecret of diſcretion for them; and, that his brother, deſir'd her to take a particular care of me, to nurſe me herſelf, and to love me as her own child. The wife eaſily believ'd all that her husband had ſaid; and having a daughter of her own but three months old, ſhe found me ſo quiet and void of the frowardneſs ſo natural to infants of my age, that her own little girl was, in a manner neglected, for the love of me. The ſame

clouts

clouts ſerv'd us both: we were kept alike clean; and ſhe made no difference between us, but in her tenderneſs, of which ſhe beſtow'd much the greater ſhare on me. The father cordelier never miſs'd a day to come and ſee me, would often weep when he embraced me; and I remember, one day, when when I was about four or five years old, obſerving him to let fall ſome tears, as he was careſſing me, I ask'd him if I had hurt him? to which he anſwer'd, ſqueezing me harder than ordinary, that truly I had made him more afraid than hurt; but now, ſays he, my fear is paſt, and I love you extremely, yon little rogue. I did not apprehend any thing of that, myſterious anſwer; but crying, told my mother, (for ſo I call'd my nurſe) that ſhe made me very ugly, ſince my uncle ſaid, I frighted him.

The good woman at that fell a laughing; and being acquainted with the ſecret of my birth, told me, my uncle lov'd me very well, and that I muſt love him as well; that I muſt obey him as a father; that I ſhould know, one day, how much I was oblig'd to him; and, that it ſignify'd nothing to talk to me of things that ſurpaſs'd my age. Tho' I heard all this, without any reflection, of of which I was not then capable, yet I have often thought, ſince, of that good lady's words; eſpecially her telling me, when ſhe

ſaw

ſaw me at play with her little daughter whom I took for my ſiſter, that ſhe would one day, ſee us two marry'd: and certainly, if the dear Roſalia (for that was the ſurgeon's daughters name) had been fortunate, and her parents had not been expos'd to the greateſt miſfortunes, I had never known half the miſery I have endur'd, but had ſurely marry'd that girl, whom alone I lov'd from my very infancy.

I muſt not omit relating here the ſurprizing effects of a paſſion, which reigns in perſons at any age. The experience I have had ever ſince I was five years old, won't permit me to doubt, but one may love, almoſt from the cradle; and that is for want of the knowledge they have, or ought to have, of the lov'd object, that people love no ſooner. I am ſure, I could ſcarce call Roſalia, before I lov'd her better than I could call her. I was ſo complaiſant to her, that in all our little diverſions, ſhe muſt have the upper hand: I was inconſolable when her mother chid her; and once, when ſhe ſhe was whipp'd for throwing me down, I was ſo dull, that 'twas impoſſible for ſignora Maria (my dear nurſe's name) to make me eat any thing, or take a wink of ſleep all night. The next day I had a fever, which continued three or four days with that violence, that they began to deſpair of my life. Whereupon, the moſt eminent phyſicians

being consulted about the means proper to be taken for my recovery, a moderate purge was agreed on, to put my spirits in motion; but I was seiz'd with such a drowsiness, that the designs of my benefactors had certainly prov'd abortive, had not signora Maria's tenderness inspir'd her with the thought of applying the remedy by the hands of little Rosalia, to whom they gave it, and instructed her what to say, to induce me to take it. In a word, her voice rouz'd me from my lethargy, aud, without a moment's resistance, I obey'd her, and swallow'd the pill, that none but she could persuade me to take.

This affair seemed to surprize all that were then present, who knew not what to think of such an extraordinary adventure. However, Rosalia never leaving me, I got well again in a very little time. She had abundance of wit, and said so many pertty things so pert, that I was never well, but when I was with her. One time being with her in the country, where I was sent for the air, after recovering that fit of sickness; as we were walking in a grove, where we used to divert ourselves, Rosalia happen'd to tread upon a snake, which soon wound itself about the poor girl's foot, and squeez'd it so hard, that she fainted away, and left me almost frighted to death. Without being able to consider the danger, I took hold of the

snake,

ſnake, and pulling him, with all my ſtrength, from Roſalia's foot, had like to have been choaked by him; for the monſter, perceiving himſelf pull'd, with that violence, from his prey, leap'd upon my ſhoulder, and wound himſelf ſo hard about my neck, that had not a gardener, who was at work in the garden, and heard us cry out at the beginning of the fray, come ſeaſonably to our aſſiſtance, I had certainly been throttled. But he kill'd the ſnake, and carried us both into the houſe; where our mother, who was then alone, had like to have ſwoon'd, as ſoon as ſhe ſaw what a ſad condition we were in.

Roſalia's foot was ſwell'd, and my neck was black and blue, and twice as big as it ſhould be. My eyes were very much ſwell'd, and but for the application of treacle and other antidotes, with which our country-houſes are always provided, againſt ſuch occaſions, which are very common in Italy, we had gone near to have been ſuffocated with the poiſon.

This accident made my mother keep ſo watchful an eye over me ever after, that ſhe would never ſuffer me to be out of her ſight; ſo that I found her affection for me very troubleſome and inconvenient, and began to grow melancholy, becauſe I could not play with Roſalia. It is almoſt incredible, that at ſix years of age, I was ſo much in love

with

with that little girl, that it was impossible for me to mind any thing that conduced to my education. However, as it seem'd very odd to my parents, as it serv'd sometimes, to divert them too. For when they found, that I could not be brought to learn any thing, Rosalia was instructed to tell me, that she would like me the better for being a scholar; because I should then know how to write love-letters to her. But as I could not be brought to read and write by any other argument, than that of pleasing my little mistress, I was afterwards so eager, that I desired my master to teach me faster, that I might not lose my love.

And indeed, nothing was wanting to give me a good education. Signor Carlocio was very rich, and having but that daughter, design'd to make me heir of all he had, by marrying her. He found I had excellent natural parts, and an admiral aptness for the sciences, and had therefore pitch'd upon a young Roman abbot to be my tutor, who was very learned in human letters, but a meer novice in the rules of good breeding. This gentleman's ill temper soon made me hate him to such a degree, that I could not forbear, one day, to tell him my hatred; for which he going to correct me, I told him, he ought to give me another kind of lesson than that of anger and revenge, and that

my

my friends had given me a pattern which I would not follow. He, ſuppoſing I had been taught to ſay thus, us'd me, ever after, with abundance of tenderneſs; and perceiving me to be mild and good-natur'd, reſolv'd to try what gentle methods would do with me; in which, no doubt, he had ſucceeded, to his reputation, if an affair had not happen'd, that depriv'd him of his liberty.

I can't forbear acquainting you, in this place, with the ſentiments of the Pedants to whom parents generally commit the education of their ſons. They are, for the moſt part, perſons of no merit, who, pretendiug to an extraordinary knack at the liberal ſciences, and having ſcraped together a competent number of phraſes and ridiculous quodlibets, look upon themſelves as the fitteſt perſons in the world, to form the minds and behaviour of young perſons; whereas, far from ſowing in their hearts the ſeed of virtue, and quelling the paſſions of youth, 'tis often found, that they are the firſt that prepare indifferent minds for all manner of wickedneſs, and conſequently lead 'em into the worſt misfortunes. The avarice or indulgence of parents is altogether unaccountable for the defects we ſee in the education of youth; and this is a corruption of ſeveral ages ſtanding. Juvenal, who

who liv'd in old Rome, made frequent complaints, that ten Sisterses were given to Crispin the cook, and but five to Quintilian.

The abbot Betubino, my master, was much fitter for a man of war, than a man of letters; so proud and conceited, that he would yield to no man; bold even to rashness; and so silly in his enterprizes, that he deserv'd to be condemn'd to the gallies, for being concerned in a conspiracy against the viceroy; of which the best account I have since been able to learn, is as follows.

The duke de ——, having run out his whole estate during his embassy at Rome, came to Naples, with a full design to enrich himself there; and to that purpose, augmented the taxes of the kingdom by one half, immediately after his arrival. Tho' that unhappy people have been us'd, for some ages, to a very heavy yoke, yet the cruel extortion and injustice that was every where committed, made 'em begin to complain, and to form cabals in the Cabarets where they gave themselves the liberty to exclaim publicly against the government then in being. These cabals continued for some months undiscover'd; till, at last, a fellow that was the very riff-raff of the people, (as Masaniello formerly) had the impudence to make himself head of the party; and then form'd the extravagant design

ſign of making himſelf king of Naples. The people who are naturally fond of novelty, and have not half the ſenſe of Eſop's aſs, were forward enough to aſſiſt the rebels; and it was thought, that France had a hand in that bold enterprize; as ſhe formerly had in the time of the Guiſes. In a word, the city was in the greateſt diſorder for three or four months, and its inhabitants divided into ſeveral factions. But the ring-leader being taken, with ſome of his accomplices, the infamous death they were put to, quieted the malecontents for ſome time; who nevertheleſs, deſign'd to take the firſt opportunity to ſhake off the Spaniſh yoke.

As ſoon as the inſurrection was quell'd, the viceroy return'd into the city; and this was a little before Eaſter. Now you muſt know the cuſtom of the Neapolitans, is to make a proceſſion every holy-thurſday, at which the principal noblemen are wont to bear the ſeveral myſteries of the paſſion; and every nobleman that has one of thoſe myſteries, is accompany'd by as many people as he can poſſibly get together. Each of theſe, again, is obliged to find a black penitential ſack, and a taper made of black wax; and to each myſtery there are twelve diſciplines, or ſcourges, with which they cut and laſh their ſhoulders. Their habits

habits are white, but quite cover'd with the blood that runs down from their shoulders. A musick, made up of several doleful instruments, accompanies this procession; which is sometimes compos'd of three or four thousand men, including the soldiers of the garrison that are employ'd to carry flambeaux. The rendezvous is at the Cordeliers, from whence they proceed to the cathedral. in the greatest order and magnificence. The whole city is illuminated, that evening with wax candles; and the ladies, who can't be seen at a window, another time, without censure, then appear there publickly, in the richest dresses; tho' 'tis a common notion, that they expect that day, to receive public demonstrations of the love of their gallants; and that those disciplinarians, being distinguish'd by coloured ribbons tied to their disciplines, use to halt under the balcony where they see any of their mistresses, and give themselves a hundred lashes as a mark of the violence of their passion. This cruel feast, which was introduced into Naples by the Spaniards, was always very pleasing to the people, who are great admirers of a shew of discipline among them; but it was not at all agreeable to the gentry till of late; when not only they are corrupted, but the nobility too assist at, and take a pride in, that odd ceremony.

The

The viceroy, who like a true Spaniard, had a mind to give the people marks of his profound Catholicism, was pleased to carry the crucifix, himself, which was the last of the holy mysteries of the passion. His retinue was very numerous, and rather too gaudy for a season set apart for repentance and mortification. And the three castles were almost exhausted of their flambeaux. This, therefore, was the opportunity pitched upon, by the remainder of the rebels, to put all the officers and disarm'd soldiers to the sword, to seize the castles, and, by that means, possess themselves of the city. And the affair was upon the point of being executed with wonderful success; when a certain Cordelier made a kind of miraculous discovery; as you shall hear.

'Tis the custom of all the Italians, to beg consecrated eggs, about Easter, of persons of their acquaintance. Now the monks being willing to come in for a snack, as well as other men, on holy thursday morning a lay-brother went into the house of an intimate friend of his, (which he us'd to frequent, and was always very welcome) and, as usual, ask'd the woman of the house for the consecrated eggs; which she gave him. Going out, he met the husband, who ask'd him, whether he had receiv'd the easter eggs? And he answer'd, yes. Then says

his friend, with a ſurly tone, La patrona a dato a voſtra paternita l'Uovo; vi daro braiole, nanzi finiſca la notte: my wife has given you eggs; i'll take care to ſupply you with a grillade, before the night is paſt. The fryar took no great notice of theſe words, but went back directly to his convent, and having found out the ſuperior, gave him an account of his begging, and, without any deſign, repeated the anſwer, which his friend had made him. The ſuperior, being a perſon of a much better wit and judgment, than his lay-brother, could not paſs the expreſſion, without making ſome reflexion thereon; and while he was walking about the cloiſter, conſidering of it, a meſſenger came to tell him, that the viceroy was at church, and deſir'd to be confeſs'd. My countrymen are naturally very ſuſpicious, and perpetually upon their guard, with reſpect to the Spaniards; whom they have experienced to be treacherous and tricking, often enough to make them diſtruſtful. The ſuperior preſently imagin'd, that his lay brother was a bait laid for him; and when he approach'd the viceroy, who waited for his confeſſing him, your excellency, ſays he, in a frightful tone, will pardon me, if I don't hear your confeſſion to day. An affair of the laſt importance, which regards your per-
ſon

ſon, and for ought I know, threatens the whole ſtate, makes me ſo uneaſy, that I give no reſt to my mind. Brother ſuch a-one came to me, and told me ſo and ſo.—— The air and tone with which the burgher ſpoke it, preſage ſome ill deſign; wherefore I deſire your excellency to ſecure him. The buſineſs is of vaſt conſequence; and delays, in ſuch caſes, often prove dangerous.

The depoſitions of the lay-brother being heard, the viceroy's guards were immediately ſent to ſeize the burgher; who was no ſooner put to the rack, but he diſcover'd the conſpiracy, and named a great many perſons engaged therein. My tutor was alſo one of that unfortunate number; and he had been broke upon the wheel, as ſeveral others were, had it not been for the inſtances of Signor Carlocio, who made friends, (and particularly the count of P.. who had lately made him his ſurgeon) and got Betubino only condemn'd to the gallies, during life. There I happen'd to ſee the poor abbot, ſome time after, very unexpectedly. One day, I went to ſee a Turk play tricks of legerdemain, in which, I am perſuaded the devil had a great ſhare. But what ſurpriz'd me more than all the reſt, was, that having thrown a piſtole, given him by a ſpectator, who had firſt mark'd

it, and ty'd a bit of ribbon to it, into the sea; he commanded a little wooden figure, or hocus-pocus, to go and fetch the pistole for supper; with orders, not to return without the same piece of money. Thereupon, he threw the figure, which had a piece of thread ty'd to it, into the water, and drew out the same again, with the pistole in his hand. But for this trick, in which he outdid all the jugglers of Naples, where there are abundance of dextrous fellows at it, he was put in the prison of the inquisition, and never seen afterwards. Going therefore, one day, with some of my friends, on board the gallies, out of curiosity, to see if the Turks was got out of the inquisition, who should call to me, but my old master, the abbot Betubino? who gave me a particular account of the deplorable state to which he was reduced. Being ten or twelve years old, I was then much more capable of impression, than when he and I were parted; and the relation of his misfortunes was the best lesson he had ever taught me in his life. I had then such a contempt of the world, and such a desire to leave it, and retire where I might be shelter'd from the dismal calamities men meet with therein, that I went to a Cordelier, and told him, how much I was inclin'd to a monastic life. Thereupon, the Cordelier presented me

me to his superior; but this gentleman would not take me at my word. He only told me, that I must pray to god for grace first, and not think such a vocation to be the work of a moment, but the exercise of several years. He order'd me to study hard, and to be devout, that God might enlighten me, and make me resolve what to do. This alter'd the case quite; and so my design of becoming a monk was laid aside, with as much ease as before it had been taken up.

Being still but a child, my friends resolv'd, after the discovery of the plot, and the restoring of peace in the city, not to take another master for me into the house; but a learned clergyman, that was my uncle's particular friend, came twice a-day, to instruct me in my studies. By this means, I so far master'd the Latin tongue, in less than a year's time, that at twelve years of age I could explain my author, tho never so intricate. In a word, my genius was seconded by the zeal and pains of that pious and ingenious priest; who exercis'd me in speaking; and, to give me the boldness so necessary for an orator, would often make me declaim in public. Living just by the Cordelier's church, I generally made my declamations therein; and thither people crowded to see me from all parts of the city.

ty. They put me on the habit of the order, and then being mounted in a pulpit, I there presented the auditory with a piece of eloquence which I did not understand; but by the cleanness of my expression, and the excellency of my voice, I came off so well, that all the principal noblemen in the city sent their coaches to bring me home to their palaces, to declaim before the ladies.

It happen'd, that as I was thus exercising my talent, one trinity-sunday, my oration occasion'd the discovery of the whole intrigue between the chevalier C—— and the countess of P . . . After having prov'd the being of a God, I was instructing my auditory, how to fear and worship him. The good priest, who had compos'd that piece, had given it an excellent turn, and drawn inferences of such sound morals, upon that subject, that my speech very much affected the hearts of my hearers, who said it was miraculous, that one of my years should be capable of making such impressions upon their minds. The princess C. . .', the chevalier C. . . .'s mother, was present in that assembly; and as she mightily lov'd her son, of whom she had not now heard a word for thirteen or fourteen years, she kept a perfect idea of him in her mind. Having, therefore, look'd upon me, some time,

time, with an extraordinary attention, ſhe found that I exactly reſembled him, both in my air, and the features of my face; inſomuch that ſhe was very much ſtartled, and, as ſoon as I had finiſh'd my declamation, came to me, and ask'd me, my name? Who, was my father? and, whether I was a Neapolitan? or what other part of Italy I was born in? To all which, and many more queſtions, I anſwer'd her to the beſt of my knowledge. My age, which was the exact time of the Chevalier's being loſt, together with my perfect likeneſs to him, increas'd her curioſity and ſuſpicion. She told the old count of P... that ſhe ſhould be glad to know my parents, and ask'd him whether he knew 'em? The count, being very willing to oblige her, deſired his lady to ſtay in her place, while he ſent for the ſurgeon, to enquire about my original. Signor Carlocio being then at his country-houſe at Puzzuolo, his wife, Signora Maria, was order'd to come herſelf. As ſoon as ſhe had entred the count's apartment, ſhe was ask'd, in an imperious tone, who were Colli's parents, and how long ſhe had nurs'd him? The poor woman made 'em ſeveral equivocating anſwers; but contradicted her ſelf ſometimes ſaying, ſhe was my mother; ſometimes, that I was a little adventurer, with whom ſhe had been entruſted. This

raiſed

raiſed the princeſs's ſuſpicion to ſuch a height, that ſhe pray'd the count to ſeize Signora Maria and her husband, to the end that ſhe might hear what became of the chevalier C—, her Son.

Accordingly, Signor Carlocio was no ſooner returned from his country-houſe, but he found the Sbirri upon his back. The Shirri are the grand provoſt's archers. He was carry'd to one of the city-priſons, and had ſcarce been ask'd a queſtion, before they accuſed him of having murdered the chevalier C——, and aſſiſted in Zebina's eſcape from her ſlavery with the counteſs of P . . . This thunder-clap came ſo unexpectedly, that it quite ſtunn'd him; and not being provided with a poſitive anſwer, but ſtanding like one amazed, and in the greateſt confuſion, they told him, he muſt either confeſs the truth, or expect to be tortured in the moſt exquiſite manner. Thereupon, he demanded time to conſider of the anſwer he ſhould make; and after they had given him two hours, to recover from his fright, he deſired to be alone with the parties concerned, to whom he declared the whole myſtery.

Madam, ſays he, addreſſing himſelf to the princeſs C——; "In vain do you ſeek after your ſon. He is dead, and bury'd in the ſame vault with the counteſs of P——:

And

And you, ſir, (to the count) who deſire to hear of Zebina, I can only inform you of her death. She was bury'd the ſame day with the counteſs, your lady; a day! fatal to ſo many and ſo great perſons! a day on which the ſun ought never more to diſpenſe his rays! in that an action was committed thereon, which poſterity will have much ado to believe! As for me and my wife, we are no ways chargeable with crimes of ſo deep a dye; but danger and charity drew us into theſe misfortunes. The little Colli, whom you ſaw in your palace, and who is ſo much admir'd by the whole city, is the unhappy ſubject of the crime you lay to my charge. Colli, the charming Colli, who ſeems to be made for no other end than to be lov'd, and to gain the admiration of all that hear him! That Colli, I ſay, is the ſon of the chevalier C—— and Zebina; and that's all I know of the matter. My wife can tell you no more; but father Angelo di Napoli, the Cordelier, can give you a better account.

Father Angelo, the Cordelier, whom I call'd uncle, was gone to aſſiſt at a provincial chapter of the fryars of his order, which was aſſembled in the province of Baſilica; and there he receiv'd the firſt advice, by one of his friends, of what had happen'd to ſignor Carlocio and his wife. The good father

not knowing what to do, nor how to behave himself in an affair of that niceness, and in which the lives and honours of some great persons were concern'd, went to ask advice of one of his friends, who having an interest with the viceroy, gave him letters of recommendation to his excellency, with which he was coming towards Naples, fully assur'd of the viceroy's protection; but falling into the hands of the Banditti by the way, they robb'd and murder'd him and his fellow-traveller, and bury'd 'em under a tree. Mean while, the provincial had sent word to father Angelo, that he must come to him at Naples, as soon as possibly he could, about affairs of great consequence: Wherefore, when no father Angelo appear'd, it was concluded, that, to avoid punishment, he was fled from justice; and hue and cries were sent after him on all sides; but to no purpose. That charge and trouble was thrown away. And thus signor Carlocio and his wife saw themselves depriv'd of the only man that could clear them, and give 'em the repose again which they had lost for the two months that they had been detain'd in prison. Notwithstanding all the precaution that was us'd to keep this affair secret, it was soon known by all the town, and told almost as many different ways, as there were tongues to tell it. Mean while,

certain

certain persons were appointed to go to the Cordeliers church, and there, opening the vault in which the countess of P——'s corps had been deposited, examine the inside of the great chest, where they found the relicts of the chevalier C—— ; which were known by his cross, and a ring on which his name and Zebina's were engrav'd in a cypher. Upon this spectacle, they knew not how to form a right judgment; but it was generally suppos'd that the count had murdered him out of jealousy, because he us'd to visit the countess, his lady, when he was alive. Hereupon, the viceroy, being no friend to the count of P——, by reason several of his relations had join'd the rebels, and following the maxims of the Spaniards, who hate any thing that would lessen the grandenr of their monarchy, order'd the count to be committed to castle St Elmo, there to remain, till his innocence should appear. These orders were readily executed; and it was hardly ever known, that so many innocent persons run the hazard of their lives, as they did.

While other people suffer'd, in this manner, upon my account, the princess C—— had conceiv'd so great a tenderness for me, that she sent me to Rome, in order to my being brought up there like a child of distinction; for which end, she put me into the

the Romiſh ſeminary. That place is one of the fineſt nurſeries, for youth, in Europe; and moſt of the princes of Germany, and almoſt all the cardinals and eminent prelates of the church of Rome, are indebted, for their education, to the famous college. The Jeſuits have the ſole direction thereof; and there is not a ſeminary in the world, wherein ſo many ſtudents are maintain'd, that obſerves ſuch an excellent order, both in regard to their behaviour, and for their manner of inſtruction. I was fourteen years of age, when I was admitted among them; and the perſons I belong'd to, made figure enough for their recommendation to do me a great kindneſs. The conſtable C——, who had been my father's intimate friend, and to whom the princeſs had given a particular charge of me, gave me all poſſible demonſtrations of his good-will, and commanded one of his ſons, who was in the ſame ſeminary, to ſtrike a cloſe friendſhip with me. The young prince readily obey'd, and would do any thing to oblige me. As I had made a greater progreſs in my ſtudies, than he, he did me the honour to confide in me, and made me tell him my ſentiments concerning his duty. He was ſo modeſt, and had ſo great a deſire to learn, that in all our converſations, he ask'd me ſeveral queſtions, which, at my age, I could not reſolve him;

him, and this being obſerv'd by our tutor, he took ſo much pains with us two, that we were envy'd by the whole college; explaining to us all the difficulties of logic, which was then our ſtudy. It may ſeem odd, that I boaſt, that ſo tender an age, I knew things that required a maturer judgment; but my readers may aſſure themſelves, that I exaggerate nothing in this hiſtory, and that, before I was full nineteen years of age, I had gone through all the Theological Theſes. It was upon this occaſion, that I gave ſuch a proof of my prodigious memory, by anſwering to all the paſſages they could ask me relating to the holy ſcriptures; when moſt of the auditory fancy'd, that it was impoſſible to be done without ſome ſupernatural aſſiſtance. This affair coming to the Pope's ear, his holineſs ſent for me, and having read about half a page out of the 1ſt book of Kings to me, I repeated it, word for word, to the pontiff, without the leaſt heſitation, juſt as if I before-hand had got it by heart. Thereupon, his holineſs was pleas'd, as a particular mark of his eſteem, to order me a purple habit, and himſelf preſented me with a caſſock of the ſame colour, which was the firſt I had ever worn. He exhorted me, to dedicate myſelf to God's ſervice, aſſur'd me, the church was a good mother, who had treaſures and crowns for

ſuch

ſuch of her children, as made it their buſineſs to honour and ſerve her; and concluded, that he wiſh'd he might live to ſee what uſe I ſhould make of the precious talents, which it had pleas'd God to beſtow upon me, to the end he might ſay to me, like the houſeholder in the goſpel, Euge, ſerve, bone, & fidelis; Well done, good and faithful ſervant.

You will eaſily imagine, that after having receiv'd ſo much honour, I could not be very humble; and the vanity I had at that time, redoubled the envy and jealouſy of ſuch as were enemies to my glory; inſomuch that they could not bear me in the college. Nevertheleſs, I remain'd there, five years, without loſing the friendſhip of the principals: and tho' young prince Alexander, and I paſquin'd 'em many a time, not ſparing our maſter's themſelves; yet none were more belov'd than we were, who had got the art of pleaſing our friends.

I'll tell you what a trick I play'd e'm one day. 'Tis the cuſtom of ſeveral communities in Rome, to build oratories; that is, after the diverſions of the carnaval, which is ſpent in maſquerading, and acting the merrieſt comedies they have, they taking a portion of holy ſcripture, and ſet it to muſick, and three days in every week, during Lent, the hiſtory of Joſhua or David is ſung by

the

the fineſt maſters in Rome, in an aſſembly of all the ſtudents and brethren of what fraternity ſoever. The muſick being ended, and the hall, where it was, rendered quite dark, by the windows being ſtopt up, diſciplines are brought in, and the friars fall a laſhing their bare ſhoulders, as if they were bewitched. But as ſoon as ever the ſuperior has made the ſignal, away they run, every one about his buſineſs, without ſtaying for the light; and holy water being placed near the door for that purpoſe, they croſs themſelves therewith from their foreheads to the tip of their chins. In our country, we are great obſervers of all manner of trifles, and thoſe are the only things we don't neglect.

One evening, when our overſeer had vexed us, I reſolved to be revenged on him; and, for that purpoſe, having provided myſelf with a ſpunge, while nothing was to be heard but the horrid noiſe of the diſciplines, and the wretched voices of thoſe that ſung Miſerere, I placed myſelf near the baſon of holy water, and having emptied it by the help of my ſpunge, I poured in its room, a viol of water, the nature of which was, to blacken in an hours time, any place moiſten'd with it. All the ſtudents of the ſeminary, and all the fathers of the community, made uſe of this water,

and

and ſo did I as well as the reſt. But juſt as we ſat down to ſupper, the croſſes began to appear plainer and plainer in all our faces; and 'tis impoſſible to tell you, the conſternation every one ſeem'd to be in. In ſhort, the prodigy alarm'd the whole ſeminary, the fathers themſelves not excepted, and, from the higheſt to the loweſt of us, we all look'd like masks. No body could tell what to make of ſuch an adventure; and it was not till after ſeveral prayers and exorciſms had been ſaid over every one of us, that they perceived the devil had no hand in the comedy, and that the water which had ſo daubed our faces, was nothing but a little vitriol diſtill'd with a few drugs, which a chymiſt, that lived over-againſt the ſeminary, had given me, to play the rogue with my companions. And rather than not be revenged of the overſeer, who had affronted me, I choſe to exerciſe my talent on the whole community. However, notwithſtanding all the methods made uſe of to diſcover the author of this piece of malice, as well by threats as intreaties, I was only ſuſpected, but never accuſed thereof. And ſo we were all obliged to ſtay within, for three or four days together, and not ſtir out of the houſe, upon account of our black faces.

But

But this was not the only trick I put upon my fellow-col'egers; for I could ſcarce let a day paſs, without ſome new touch, that either mortify'd me, or occaſion'd complaints againſt me; inſomuch that, at laſt, they wrote to acquaint the princeſs C.... that they muſt e'en turn me out, if I continued to put the ſeminary into diſorder, by my raillery; and ſhe wrote back to the conſtable C——, who came and ſchool'd me very handſomely. I proteſted to him, that I knew nothing of the holy-water, and that as for my verſes, they concerned none but my companions. However, I told him, I would be more reſerved for the future, and deſired him to procure me, therefore, the reconciliation of the princeſs C—— This I ſoon found he had done with a witneſs; for about a week after, my penſion for idle expences was increas'd.

Mean time, I took all opportunities of improving myſelf; ſo that, in a ſhort time, nothing came amiſs to me: The moſt profound ſciences ſeem'd eaſy; and I never went over any difficulty the ſecond time, without conquering it. And this made my maſters the more willing to bear with my imperfections, becauſe they thought themſelves the chief cauſe of the progreſs I made in my ſtudies; which, indeed, had alone induced 'em to preſent me to the Pope.

For I am ſure, if his holineſs had ask'd 'em, whether they deſigned the glory, or their own praiſe, in ſo doing, they would have been puzzled to have return'd the pontiff a true anſwer.

At laſt, after I had been at Rome ſix years, and made conſiderable advances in learning, advice was ſent me from Naples, that the princeſs C—— was dead, and that the count of P——, who had been confined in caſtle St. Elmo ever ſince, was ſet at liberty, upon a kind of miraculous proof of his innocence. Tho' I was ſtill but young, I had already got a great many acquaintance; my ſtudies had enabled me to make reflexions; and now it was, that I firſt began to preſage my misfortunes that afterwards befel me. The princeſs C —— had left me nothing to live on. Signor Carlocio and his wife were both dead, of ſtench and miſery, in the priſon, where they had been detained ever ſince they were firſt taken up. My dear ſiſter Roſalia was clapt up in a conſervatory, or monaſtery for the daughters of parents that had forfeited their eſtates. And in this deſtitute condition from abroad, the fathers of the ſociety, who remember'd my unlucky tricks, without valuing my wit a ruſh, came to me, and knowing there was no body left to take my part, ſaid, it was time for me to think of

returning

returning to Naples; and that it was highly necessary I should set out, forthwith, to look after my concerns there; and, above all, to provide my self with a guardian that would take care of me.

This was a bitter pill indeed! Pope Innocent X. my good friend, was just dead. The constable C—— had taken his son out of the seminary; and tho' I danc'd attendance at the constable's house twenty times, I could not light on him at home. Abandoned thus, what could I do? or, whither could I go? In short, I should have given myself up to the deepest despair, had not the good providence of God, which carried me through all my cala ities, msent me a benefactor, just in the nick of time, who afforded some relief to my miserable condition.

Going, one day, to see for the constable C——, and the servants telling me as usual, that he was not at home, I went into the church of the holy apostles, which joins to the constable's palace; and there, as soon as prayers were over, fell asleep. I forgot to tell you, that I was come out of the seminary, had very little money, and the goods of a scholar, every body knows, will not carry him far. Besides, the Jews, who are our merchants upon such dismal occasions, are the greatest misers upon earth,

taking the advantage of a man's necessity, to despise whatsoever one offers them, and thereby obliging you to beg and pray 'em to pick your pocket. Thus, I say, reduc'd to beggary, o'erwhelm'd with sorrow and misery, and not knowing what to do in so forlorn and deplorable condition, I fell asleep. It was about two of the clock, and I had sat my self down in a confession-chair, where no body could see me: But scarce was I got to sleep, before I dreamt a horrid frightful dream, which made me cry out so loud, that I alarm'd the fryars that were meditating in the choir, after compline.

That dream made too great an impression on me, ever to be forgot as long as I live. Methought, I was just before the church of the conventual fathers at Naples, where my father and mother are bury'd, and there playing with my sister Rosalia, as I used to do, father Angelo, my dear uncle, that had done so many kindnesses, came to me all bloody, and his face cover'd with dust, and with a dismal air and voice, bid me follow him. At first, I did not care to obey him, but threatning me, with a grim and terrible look, I went, with him, into the cloister, and bid Rosalia adieu! in a tender and languishing tone. I had no sooner entered the cloister, but the friar conducted me to the side of the vestry, and leading

leading me into a by-apartment, he ordered me to take away the wood and dirt that lay in one corner of the room. I had no ſooner done ſo, but, methought a woman, of majeſtick ſize, roſe out of the ground, and looking upon me with an air of pride and tenderneſs, told me, with a ſigh, that I might well make complaints, and that ſhe pitied my deſtiny! I was about to ſpeak, and ask the lady, why heaven was ſo angry with me? when ſhe ſpoke to me, in a language ſo obſcure and barbarous, that it was impoſſible for me to underſtand her, and beckening to me to look towards the door, I ſaw a proper man coming in, with a very young lady, and was ſo pale and disfigured, that death itſelf could not be more terrible to the ſight. That ſpirit fixed her eyes upon me, and taking me by the hand, wrote I know not what character, which did not appear, but which I felt for above ten years after, till it was explained to me by a famous cabaliſt at Venice, to whom I gave a deſcription of my pain. But, to proceed. —— After theſe methought, entered ſignor Carlocio and his wife, who, having embraced me a long while, bid me flee my country, unleſs I had a mind to undergo the ſame fate as my unhappy parents had done. They told me, the Chevalier whom I ſaw there, was my father,

and

and the princeſs C——'s ſon, who had been my benefactrix; that the woman that had ſpoke to me in a very obſcure tongue, had loſt her life in bringing me into the world, and that all theſe misfortunes had been occaſioned by the monſter that came in with my father. This made me very deſirous to learn ſomething more of my origine, of which I had never known any thing before, and ſtepping up, therefore, to ſignor Carlocio, to embrace him, I begged of him not to forſake me, but take me along with him. Thereupon, there was ſuch a dreadful noiſe, preſently, in the chamber, that I thought the whole convent was coming down about my ears. Hereupon I wak'd; but whilſt I was yet between ſleeping and waking, I roar'd out in ſuch a manner, as I ſaid before, that the monks, who were meditating in the choir, came running to me in a maze, they thought I was poſſeſſed with an evil ſpirit, by my making ſo many faces and grimaces. They fell to queſtioning me, immediately, who I was, and what I did there? but I made them no other anſwer than my tears and ſighs, which were ſo hearty, that the father-ſuperior of the convent, who was a good man, and ordered them to carry me into a chamber, and put me to bed.

His

His orders were readily obey'd; and all the while I was carrying away and undressing, I spoke never a word. The truth is, I was perfectly stunn'd; and my dream, and fasting together, had got so fast hold of my spirits, that I looked as innocent as a child of a year old, and was thought by the fryars to be so in good earnest. But no sooner had I recovered from my fright, and set my mind a little at rest again, but I melted into tears, and desir'd one of the monks, that staid with me, to let me speak to the superior. My desire was immediately granted, and the venerable father being come into my chamber, with a smiling countenance, that had joy and comfort in it.

Ah, reverend father, says I to him, the liberty I have taken in sending for you hither, may seem strange to you, and I am sorry for it; but if you will please to hear me a little, I shall convince you, that I am not beside myself, and that I am worthy of some compassion, which I beg you would shew me, reverend father, and assist me your advice, in the name of God. I cannot doubt, but providence guided me into your monastery, as an asylum or place of refuge against the miseries that threaten me. Once, alas! I was dear to a brother of yours, one father Angelo, who, they told

told me, was my uncle; he lov'd me from my very birth, and I had ſuch a tenderneſs for him, that I could not be a day without ſeeing him. 'Tis now ſix or ſeven years ago, that I have not been able to hear of him; and I am even ignorant what became of my parents. The princeſs C——, who took me from them, and put me into the Romiſh ſeminary, has debarred me of all the means to inform my ſelf of their fate. That princeſs is now dead, and 'tis time I were ſo too, ſince I am friendleſs, don't know any relation I have in the world, and am thus expoſed to periſh with hunger and neceſſity. This diſcourſe mov'd the good father's compaſſion, and he aſſured me, that he had a ſenſe of my misfortunes; that father Angelo, whom I had named to him, was his particular friend; that 'twas true, no body certainly knew what was become of him, notwithſtanding the diligent ſearch that had been made; but that he would ſupply the place of that uncle to me; and that, therefore I ought to comfort myſelf. He added, that he'd take care I ſhould never want for any thing, and that if I was willing to enter into their order, he might ſtand me in good ſtead, that I ſhould have no reaſon to lament my loſſes at Naples. I begg'd of him, to continue his affection to me, aſſuring him, I would

would do my endeavour to deſerve his protection and good-will, by an exact obedience; that formerly, indeed, when I was but eight or nine years old, I had a great deſire to take St. Francis's habit, which I had the honour to wear, ſeveral times, before the principal lords of the city, when I rehears'd ſermons. Theſe particulars, which were known all over Italy, riveted the ſuperior ſo faſt in my intereſt, that for the month that I tarried in his convent, I liv'd upon the beſt things that were to be had therein.

If I had known, from that time, the ſpirit of monarchiſm, I ſhould have taken care not to have embrac'd it, as I afterwards did. But I was a young ſcholar, juſt come out of a ſociety, where I lived under conſtraint enough. And neceſſity, which occaſions ſo many wrong ſteps to be taken, obliged me to take up with a courſe of life for which I was by no means cut out, and in which I met with nothing but misfortunes; as the following ſheets will make appear.

I lived a month in the convent of the Holy Apoſtles at Rome, with a great deal of pleaſure, and all the ſatisfaction I could poſſibly enjoy in that ſtate of life. I was dreſs'd very neatly, at the charge of the ſuperior, my table was very well ſerv'd,

and I had always a monk with me, to bear me company, when my illuſtrious benefactor was out of the way. That monk was a young Meſſineze ſcholar, who us'd to maintain Theſes in the general chapter, under father Laurea, who was ſince made a cardinal, by Innocent XI. and the Theſes were dedicated to the king of Spain, according to the cuſtom of that nation, who dedicate all their works to their ſovereign. The young Meſſineze father happen'd ſo to weary his mind with ſtudy, that he fell ſick the day before the chapter was held; and not a cordelier could be found to ſupply his place. Father Laurea, to whom his pupil had often commended my memory and learning, not knowing what to do in this caſe, at laſt reſolved to make the propoſal to me. It being contrary to my intereſt to be known at Rome, and I being aſſured, that all the Neapolitan lords, and Roman princes, that were in the Spaniſh intereſt, would be preſent at the chapter, deſired to be excuſed, and told the profeſſor Laurea, that the ſuperior would never ſuffer me to take the habit of the order, to lay it down the next day; and that, therefore, it was to no purpoſe, to make me a propoſal that might do him a Diskindneſs, and expoſe me, beſides, to the world, at a time when I had a thouſand reaſons to conceal

ceal my ſelf. My arguments ſignify'd nothing; and my frequent refuſal ſerv'd for no other end, than to redouble his inſtances, and conſequently, add to the neceſſity I lay under of accepting the propoſal. For the ſuperior himſelf came and deſired me ſo to do; aſſuring me, that no body knew me; and that he lov'd me too well, not to do all he could to forward my advancement. I had not then the ſenſe and judgment, to foreſee any thing that might befal me from that maſquerade; and had but two days to prepare myſelf, and learn a long diſcourſe in Latin, which I was to make to the aſſembly.

On the day appointed, I appear'd in the pulpit, habited like a monk. Being then but twenty years old, my age ſurpriz'd all that were were preſent, who were amaz'd to ſee me croſſing myſelf. Their aſtoniſhment was much greater, when they heard me anſwer, and repeat, ſyllable for ſyllable, all the arguments propoſed to me. In a word, the ſucceſs of that action exceeded their expectation. I ſpoke, for three hours together, without heſitation; and did not once put the profeſſor to the trouble of anſwering a word. The conſtable C—— who preſided in that aſſembly, ask'd the ſuperior, who I was? and, how long I had worn the habit? he could learn nothing,

but that I had been a novice, from ten years of age; brought from Calabria as a prodigy, to become the admiration of the whole city of Rome. Several cardinals, and other lords, who had heard me maintain Theses in the Romish seminary, thought they knew me again, and told the monks, they knew who I was, and that they were happy in getting so illustrious a person into their body. The Theses finish'd, I was oblig'd to wait on the constable, and return him thanks for the honour he had done the order. He examined me a long time, and told me, he should be glad to see me at his palace, I humbly thank'd him for the honour he did me in particular, and assur'd him I would wait upon him the next day, to receive his orders.

This promise, which I had made to the constable, very much puzzled me; for I knew well enough, that if once he closeted me, I should be discovered. Nay, I fancy'd, that he knew me already; and therefore to be even with him for the trouble he gave me, by denying himself, when I first came out of the seminary, I desir'd the superior, by some means or other, to bring me off making that visit. The good father granted my request, and sent me away, the next day, for Naples, with letters directed to

one

one of his friends, recommending me to him, as his own brother. He ſent ſome monks with me to ſee me as far as Neptuno, where I embarked; and after a day and a half's ſail, arrived at Naples, and went directly to the marquis Lambini's palace, which was the friend to whom my letters were directed; but the marquis was not at home.

The conſtable C—— not ſeeing me the next day, as I had promiſed him he ſhould, was highly affronted at my proceedings. He went and reproach'd the ſuperior, and aſſured him, that he would find an opportunity to be revenged both on him and me. The ſuperior alledg'd but ſorry reaſons in his defence; and Laurea's enemies thence took occaſion to accuſe him of converſing with a familiar ſpirit, to have the honour of ſo illuſtrious a diſciple; for the Italians are great believers of ſpirits. On the other hand, his friends told the others, by way of raillery, that it was his good angel, that took upon him the form of a young fryar, to ſupply the place of father Carlo di Meſſina, and keep up the reputation of father Laurea. While theſe ſcenes were acting in the convent, Alexander VII. who was then Pope, was inform'd of the ſtory different ways. Some told it to him as it was: Others aggravated it with malicious circumſtances:

ſtances: And one man impudently affirm'd to his holineſs, that while I was maintaining the Theſes, he ſaw a little ſpirit in my cowl. Thereupon, the Pope ſent for the ſuperior of the holy apoſtles, who went to the palace with father Laurea; and after having examin'd 'em touching the little devil, he remain'd of opinion, that it was true, and requir'd 'em to produce me; and for that end, to ſend for me back from Naples. This affair, however, was ſoon put out of his mind, by another of far greater importance to him; which was, the bringing of his family into Rome, tho' he had before ſworn never to do it. And as that hiſtory is very particular, and the pontiff's ſubtilty therein no leſs remarkable, it may be worth your while to hear it.

Alexander VII. was born at Sienna, of the family of the Chigi, which afterwards became famous, as well for their authority in Rome, as for their wealth. He was made a cardinal by Urban VIII. and his modeſty and great skill in affairs, contributed very much in raiſing him to the papal chair. The conclave fix'd their eyes upon him, in hopes of a reformation; the reign of Innocent X. having given occaſion of complaint to moſt of the princes of Europe. Donna Olympia, his aunt, who had a great influence over him, had made him commit a

thouſand

thouſand faults. The ſordid avarice of that princeſs had render'd all the offices contemptible in the ſight of good men; in that they were no otherwiſe to be obtain'd, but by ſimony. Her inſatiable deſire of riches, put her upon all enterprizes, and ſhe ſucceeded in 'em all. But the Pope they now propoſed to create, had no body to advance, ſince, he ſaid, he ſcarce knew his own name. Being elected, as a mark of his ſincerity, he took an oath, never to receive any of his relations in Rome, if any ſuch he had; but nevertheleſs, the moſt eminent of thoſe that bore his name in Sienna, ſoon came to viſit him, and to aſſure him of their moſt humble obedience. However, he ſtuck to the oath he had made, would receive no body, nor acknowledge any of thoſe gentlemen. A certain poor friar, who liv'd obſcurely upon a ſmall eſtate he had in the country, found means to let him know, that he was ſtill alive, and that he had formerly aſſiſted his holineſs, in his neceſſity. The Pope would fain not have remembered it; but nature was more prevalent with him than his duty, and he ſent the friar word, that he ſhould be glad to ſee him, and make him reign with him in Rome; but, that he had taken an oath, which gave him ſome uneaſineſs: Wherefore, he deſired him to

have

have patience, or find out ſome expedient to ſet his conſcience at reſt.

Don Mario (for that was the friar's name) adviſed with ſeveral eminent caſuiſts, and, at laſt, found a hole for the Pope to creep out at, by receiving the friar in the country. This turn of equivocation ſatisfy'd the holy father, made the enemies of the church ſmile, and mortify'd ſuch as were really good men. Don Mario was received at Caſtle-Gondolfo, with all the tokens of a brotherly friend hip. His family entered Rome, and Nepotiſm became ſo inſolent, as perfectly to maſter the Pope himſelf, who did unheard of actions. I need not mention his enterprize againſt France, which is known to all the world, and of which the treaty of Piſa is an everlaſting monument. I remember, that in the beginning of Don Mario's reign, the Roman painters drew a picture, in which the Pope is repreſented kneeling before a crucifix, out of whoſe ſides iſſued piſtoles, inſtead of blood. Alexander VII. was catching them in his Tiara, or triple crown; and his family were below, filling great bags with the piſtoles that fell. The other cardinals were endeavouring to throw down the relations, ſome holding out their caps, others their hats, all making uſe of thoſe words in the creed,

crucifixus

crucifixus etiam pro nobis: which they interpreted, the crucifix is alſo for us, inſtead of, crucify'd alſo for us. In a word, there was nothing that they thought would vex the family of the Chigi, which they did not do. But it was like ſpeaking to things inanimate; for the Chigi follow'd their buſineſs, and laugh'd at thoſe that would have ſpoil'd their aim. One day when Don Mario's ſtately palace was building, the Pope's arms, which are mountains and a green oak, were no ſooner ſet up, but Paſquil obſerving the oak was effaced, cry'd out, Il porco e graſſo; perqueſto a laſciato la quercia, a di morir preſto; the hog has no longer occaſion for acorns, but is fat, and muſt die e'er long. This inſolent manner of ſpeaking heartily griev'd the Pope, who order'd ſearch to be made for the author, with promiſe of reward to any that ſhould diſcover him. The next morning, he found upon the table in the cloſet, the hiſtory of Pope Sixtus V. with the cruel treatment he gave the author of a Paſquil, who was ſo raſh and fooliſh as to his own guilt; and judging thereby, that no body would expoſe himſelf to the like rigour, he deſiſted from the purſuit of ſuch kind of trifles, and ſhew'd ſome reſentment to Dom Mario, for having rendered him odious to the people.

I have been ſomewhat tedious in this relation, tho' it is a digreſſion. Nevertheleſs, it is not uſeleſs; becauſe by it you may ſee how dangerous a thing it is to diſoblige my countrymen, who never forget an injury, but make uſe of any way to ſatisfy their paſſion of revenge.

The conſtable C——, who had not yet forgot the affront I put upon him, reveng'd it upon the ſuperior; making uſe, for that purpoſe, of a friar, who purely out of malice, went and confidently told the conſtable, of an intrigue between the ſuperior and a certain nun. This affair went ſo hard on the ſide of the good father, that had it not been for prince P——and cardinal B—— he had certainly been ſent to the gallies. (For 'tis the fate of the Italian monks, to be chain'd to the oar, for the leaſt tranſgreſſion of their duties.) The ſuperior, therefore, not being able to live any longer in the holy apoſtles, baniſh'd himſelf into a convent in Naples, where I ſaw him one day, in a miſerable condition enough. His ſuperior was devoted to the family of the C——s, and made his court to the conſtable, at the expence of the poor friar. Mean while, I was at Naples, myſelf, in a very ſorry equipage; and, but for the continual protection of providence had gone near to have periſh'd with extreme

want.

want. The marquis Lambini, to whom the ſuperior of the convent had recommended me, as I ſaid before, was not in town; but gone to viſit his eſtate near Palermo. When he came home, whether it was, that he would not be troubled with me, or that the affair of his friend having made a noiſe in Italy, he had now abandoned him in his diſtreſs; or, whatever elſe was the cauſe, I could never get to the ſpeech of his lordſhip, but found myſelf reduced to the greateſt neceſſity, and was obliged to beg from convent to convent, to prevent my dying with hunger. How many times did I curſe the inutility of the ſciences! I would have learnt ſome trade, whereby to keep myſelf from ſtarving: I was aſhamed to beg: my cloaths, whether linnen or woollen, were good for nothing; and grief and faſts had given me an air of melancholy, and pale looks, which none but my ſelf with the crowd, which is in the churches on particular holidays, they treated me as a birbo, or pick-pocket, or avoided me for my cloaths ſake, leſt they ſhould loſe nothing by me. I retir'd, o'nights, to a good woman's, where I found ſhelter; for her houſe was a bawdy-houſe, and, conſequently, open to all that brought her money: But I was very ſhabby, having ſcarce cloaths enough to cover my nakedneſs, that

the whores would not ſo much as look upon me; and, one morning, as I was playing the wag with one of my landlady's daughters, ſhe ſerv'd me ſuch a trick, that I gave her a box o' th' ear, and ran out of the houſe, reſolving never to enter it again, as long as I lived.

I rang'd up and down the city, all the afternoon, without ſucceſs; ſo that I could not tell what to do with myſelf. 'Twas almoſt night, and conſequently, time to think of a bed: for the ſharpneſs of the ſeaſon made it dangerous to lie in the ſtreets. Beſides, it were three to one, but I ſhould be ſtripp'd and murdered, in Naples, by the Marioles, who patroul there all night. This, I thought, was a ſad caſe! and as I was going, twice as faſt as uſual, towards the convent of the great friars, where I deſign'd to pray the porter to let me lay in the cloiſters; I was ſtopp'd by two women, covered with a mantle, juſt at the count of P——'s door; one of whom call'd me by my name, and ask'd me, if ſhe was not miſtaken? and, whether my name was Colli. Let me have been any body elſe, be ſure, I'd have taken the name at that time, which they had given me. Scarce, therefore, had I own'd my name, but, taking me into the palace-yard, the old woman left me to the careſſes

and

and embraces of a young one, whom I did not know, becauſe it was dark; but who preſently gave me to underſtand who ſhe was, by calling me her dear brother, and asking me, if I had forgot the unhappy Roſalia? That very name was like to have ſtruck me dead; but recovering myſelf a little, the old woman took me by the hand, and led me home to her houſe, which was in a lane behind the convent, where I deſign'd to lodge. I was no ſooner got into the old woman's chamber, but, having eat nothing all that day, I deſir'd her to give me ſomething to refreſh me. She preſently gave me a hearty dram of brandy; and by that time I was a little recovered of my faintneſs, I heard the tender and mournful expreſſions of my dear Roſalia. Oh that that I could but, in this place, at leaſt, loſe the remembrance of an affair, that kills me every time it comes into my mind! It was now ſome years, ſince Roſalia and I had heard from one another; and yet had mutually reſerv'd the greateſt love that ever was known. The firſt queſtion ſhe ask'd me, was, whether I ſtill loved her? and, whether I believed ſhe had never ceas'd thinking of me? She told me, that, after the diſgrace of her family, ſhe was put in a conſervatory, where ſhe lived till ſhe was about thirteen years of age, and then made

her

her escape, with one of her companions, and came to this old woman's, who was formerly a friend of her mother's, and where she used to go sometimes in her parents life-time; that the old woman, who was a widow, and had no children, lived upon the private alms of persons of quality, that she had often spoke to her about me, and of all the affairs of her family; as well as of the secret of my birth, and the sad catastrophe of my unhappy parents. This discourse was accompany'd with such showers of tears, that I could not enough admire the natural tenderness of that lovely person. At last, being come a little to myself again, I assur'd her, that, if she would but suffer me, I would make her fate my own. At those words, she blush'd, redoubled her tears, and told me, that, indeed our parents had formerly a design to marry us; but—— my dear Colli, says she, with confusion in her face, that time is now past; 'tis now too late; and the unhappy Rosalia is no longer worthy of the dear Colli! necessity has exposed me to the worst of misfortunes, and I did not yield to my disgrace, till I had suffered all that misery could inflict. I am conducted, every evening, by this old woman, to certain persons of quality, who keep me till midnight, when I come back to this little hole, with a piece of money, which

which ſerves me and my companion to live upon. Now, judge you, whether, in theſe circumſtances, I can conſent to your propoſal! She told me afterwards, that ſhe was going, when I met her, to the count of P———, who did not know ſhe was his ſurgeon's daughter; that it was but two or three months ago, that the count return'd from one of his country-ſeats, where he retired from his confinement in caſtle St. Elmo; that, as old as he was, he was extremely addicted to women; and that he had ſeen her ſeveral times, about that time of night: That indeed, ſhe did not know how to excuſe herſelf to him, for diſappointing him now; but that ſignora Lucia (her companion) ſhould go, with all ſpeed, and make him believe, that ſhe was taken ill, as ſhe went home, and to deſire him to excuſe her upon that account.

Mean time, I tarry'd alone in Roſalia's chamber, quite aſtoniſh'd at the extravagant caprice of fate! Sure, you and I deſerve compaſſion, dear ſiſter, ſays I, with a faint voice, and half-drown'd in tears; what have we done, that heaven ſhould ſet itſelf thus againſt us? and under what cruel ſtar was I born, that I ſhould bring all that have had any relation with me, into ſo much trouble and miſery? Yes, dear Roſalia, I knew but too well, who you were,

and

and who I am. The obligations I am under to your parents, are innumerable; they loſt their lives to ſave mine; and expoſed you to the lamentable condition to which you are now reduced, by endeavouring to ſcreen me from fate's relentleſs fury! How unhappy am I, that I cannot deliver you from the ſad and pitiful caſe you are in! but I am too miſerable myſelf, and want help and means of ſubſiſtence! Some time after, the old woman came in, and obſerving us both to be very dull, ſhe conducted me into the garret, where, having made me a bed as neatly as ſhe could, I laid myſelf down, and paſs'd the night quietly enough.

I took up my lodging in this houſe for a fortnight or three weeks, going, in the day-time, to beg the Mineſtre at the monaſtery-gates, where it was given to the poor, and, in the evening, retiring hither for my repoſe. I have, ſeveral times, eat five or ſix of thoſe Mineſtres in a morning, ſome with fat, and ſome with oil, according to the different orders that gave it me. At laſt, not knowing what to do with myſelf, and wanting courage to liſt among the troops that were then raiſing for Sicily, I deſired my ſiſter to procure me to be a page to ſome of her perſons of quality. The repoſe which I had now enjoy'd for three

months, in Naples, had given me an opportunity of picking up my loose crums; and I made a shift to get myself tolerably well dress'd, to make my appearance; signora Lucia being so kind as to borrow a suit of a burgher's son in the neighbourhood, with whom she was acquainted. Soon after, she went and shew'd me to the count of P——, assuring him, I was his son, lately come from Venice. The count, who was a good obliging old gentleman, not knowing me, by reason I had left Naples very young, promised to get me a place at his daughter's, who had marry'd the marquis of T——; he had that daughter by the countess, his lady, who had ruined my father; and she was twelve years of age, when her mother died.

The character he gave me to the marchioness of T—— made her very desirous to see me, I was conducted to her by her Majordome, and soon after, was presented to the marchioness's mother-in law; and she, finding me too big for the marchioness, who looked as young as I, kept me herself, and sent a compliment of thanks to the count, promising him to take care of me, as a present from his hands. Rosalia, whom I told, in the evening, what good fortune had befallen me, did not at all approve of this exchange. She knew the old marchio-

neſs too well, and aſſur'd me, that ſhe had in her time, ruin'd a hundred pages, to whom ſhe had made ſeveral advances; adding, that it was dangerous to have any thing to do with ſuch a Jezebel. But that which would have ſtartled a man in his right ſenſes, puff'd me up with odd kind of notions of my good fortune. I thought, I ſhould never want for any thing, if I could but pleaſe a perſon of her ſize; and I flattered myſelf, that I had merit enough to inſpire the lady with ſentiments for me different from thoſe ſhe had had for others. The next morning, I waited upon the count of P-- --, and he took me in his coach, and carry'd me to his ſiſter-in-law's; who receiv'd me with demonſtrations of a particular good will. She queſtion'd me about the behaviour of the Venetian ladies, and ask'd me, if I had not ſerv'd in that country? Signora Lucia, whoſe ſon I went for, and who was a Venetian, had taught me my leſſon, and in an hour's time, inſtructed me how to anſwer and deceive the moſt curious perſon living. Wherefore, having given the old marchioneſs entire ſatisfaction, ſhe immediately appointed me to wait upon her chamber, telling me, that ſhould be my buſineſs: And for that purpoſe, ſhe recommended me to an old governante, whom ſhe ordered to keep me neat, and let me want for nothing.

Beatrice

Beatrice, the governante, had formerly been a ſervant to the counteſs of P——and an intimate friend of the unfortunate Zebina. She was the only perſon let into the intrigue between the chevalier and the counteſs. After the death of her miſtreſs, ſhe pray'd the count to permit her to go out of his houſe, where, ſhe ſaid, ſhe ſhould ſoon die, elſe, with grief and melancholy; whereupon, the count preſented her to his daughter; and the old marchioneſs, finding her to be a cunning and prudent woman, ſoon won her over to her intereſt, and made her the confident of all her intrigues. She had alſo the ſole management of the pages, and all the ſervants of the houſe.

The extraordinary recommendation of the old marchioneſs, made Beatrice take a particular care of me, and finding me of a brisk and lively temper, ſhe conceiv'd I know not what tenderneſs for me, which, however, afterwards ſav'd my life and honour. One day, as I was playing the wag with her, and calling her, my dear mamma, ſhe look'd upon me very earneſtly, and, ſqueezing my hand, told me, ſhe did not know but I might ſpeak true; for that time was, ſhe had as fine a boy as ever the ſun ſhone on, who had very much of my air; and that if he had not died in her own arms, ſhe could not have taken me for him.

She added, that she was not, however mistaken in assuring me, that I had the air and gestures of two persons whom she had lov'd extremely; and that if I was not the son of the Chevalier C—— and the countess of P——, at least, I might go for such a one. The governante's discourse made my heart turn within me; and I had much ado to conceal from her the occasion of my surprize. I assur'd her, that I had never been at Naples, and that signora Lucia, my mother, whom the count of P—— knew very well, lay in with me at Venice, and left me with one of her sisters, till now: I added, that my mother having sent me word, that she wanted my assistance, I was come to serve her, and help to get her bread.

Beatrice took all this for gospel, and press'd me no farther upon that article. Night being come, I lay in a little closet, near the marchioness's chamber, where, as soon as I thought myself alone, I abandon'd myself to all the reflexions that a young person cou'd make, in such a posture of affairs. I cou'd not sleep for my life, my head running upon what the governante had said; and if at any time I dozed, a thousand frightful dreams presently waked me, and made me utter the heartiest sighs and complaints. The old marchioness, who could lie a-bed, and hear me breathe, heard

me

me often repeat these words, O stelle! O sorte! Anco tu non finisse? Oh heavens! Oh fortune! Oh fate! will you never have done perplexing me? As soon as it was day-break, the marchioness sent for me into her chamber, and ask'd me, whether I had slept well? I answered, that I had been a little sick; but that it was now gone over, and I was very well again. She then asked me, whether I had a great affection for her service? and, whether I would be discreet and prudent in some small affairs, which she might entrust me withal. I assured her, that her will should be the rule of my life; that she might dispose of me, as she pleased; and, that was all I had, since fortune had bestowed no more upon me. Very well, says she, with an air of reserve, I require nothing but your zeal, and a little affection: go and bid Beatrice come hither, and for your own part, get you to bed again, and expect there my orders: You have not slept to night, and I have my reasons for taking care of your health.

I obey'd, without making her a word of answer, (for I had been told before, that my lady was too imperious to bear any contradiction) and lay down upon the bed, without pulling off my cloaths, I had scarce laid half an hour, but in comes Beatrice,

with

with a posset, and, —— Franciſchino, ſays ſhe, (for that was the name I went by) do they uſe pages at Venice, as we do at Naples? Here's a favour of my lady's: She commands you to accept it, and to take care of yourſelf; for ſhe loves her ſervants ſhould enjoy perfect health, and eſpecially, would have ſuch as are about her perſon, always look freſh and plump. Tho' theſe equivocating expreſſions put me in mind of what Roſalia had told me; yet I was not ſo much ſtartled at the compliment, as that it was made to a ſervant that had hardly been a week in the houſe. I had ſcarce put on my breeches, but one came to bid me wait. I thought this a little odd; but anſwered Beatrice, that I was very much obliged to her for procuring me ſuch a favour of my lady; and, that I began to find the effects of the good-will which ſhe had ſhewn me.

She anſwered, that I was indebted, for it, to the marchioneſs's goodneſs; and that if ſhe had not yet given me marks of her friendſhip, if I would believe her, and were wiſe, I ſhould know what an affection ſhe had for me. I took hold of both her hands, and with a thouſand flattering expreſſions, made her promiſe to inſtruct me, upon all occaſions, how to behave myſelf towards my lady. As we were thus talking together very low, for fear of being heard the

the marchioness grew impatient, and rung the bell. Thereupon, Beatrice left me, but first assured me, that she would meet me, in the evening, in a closet in the gallery, where nobody would disturb us; and so desired me to be there at five of the clock, when an officer was to wait on my lady, in order to chat together for an hour or so. I could never imagine, that the governante, who was old enough to be my grandmother, was in love with me, but took all her kindnesses to me, as flowing from her good-nature. But my fate had condemn'd me to old women! And what a cursed plague is it, to be obliged to be complaisant to persons one don't love.

Never was any punishment like that I endured, upon account of those two old women! One had a mind I should love her, and never be from her; the other, who was privy to, and had the management of the intrigue, was always buzzing in my ear, that I had too great an affection for my lady, and none for her. This was the life I led for a year together, and not a day pass'd, but I made resolutions of ridding myself of such a horrid slavery.

But nothing would serve my turn, forsooth, but I must be a monk! I was now one and twenty years old, and did not doubt but the great friars would admit me among them,

them, if I would but ask them. But, in a little time, that thought was put out of my head, by one that ſpite brought in. One day, when I had taken phyſick, and kept my chamber, I heard an officer with my lady, who us'd to wait on her every evening, at five of the clock. I don't know, whether the marchioneſs had forgot, that I was juſt by her apartment, and that nothing hinder'd me from ſeeing all that paſs'd, but a ſingle partition; however, to ſatisfy my ſelf, whether I was miſtaken, or not, I made a little hole in the partition, behind a picture, thro' which I could look down upon my lady's bed-ſide, entertaining his old miſtreſs with proteſtations of his ardent deſires. I was confounded mad, to ſee a rival enjoy ſo great a ſhare of the marchioneſs's heart; and immediately conceived ſuch an averſion for her, that if I had known where elſe to have got my bread, I ſhould never have govern'd my paſſion, but had left the houſe that very moment.

Beatrice coming to ſee me, I told her what I had heard. She fell a laughing at my ſimplicity and reſentment; and knowing, by that, what I had to do, I reſolv'd to have patience, and by ſome trick or other, revenge my ſelf on my rival; for which, ſome time after, I found the following opportunity.

As

As I was known to be my lady's favourite, one day, when she was going into the country, to tarry all night, I pretended myself sick, and desired her to excuse my journey. The marchioness (who was very careful of me, upon account of the pretty stories I told her, and the great regard I ever shew'd to all her motions, whereby I won her heart) readily consented; and not only so but ordered Beatrice not to stir from me, for fear I should run abroad. However, I found means to convey a letter, in my lady's name, to the five-o'-th' clock-officer; wherein she desired him to come as late as he could to her apartment, by reason she was to go to her daughter-in-law, the young marchioness's, and should not come back till after supper; but that, as for the rest, he might go his old way, and stay in the closet, till she came.

My gentleman in scarlet does just as I ordered him, and about ten of the clock at night, he was desired to go to bed. As soon as ever he was laid down, who should make herself his consort, snuggling close to his side, but an old negro-slave, whom I had hired for that purpose, with orders, not to speak a word all night, tho' she was much about the marchioness's age. Mean time, I had loosen'd a board of the partition between the closet and the chamber; and,

by that means, ſtole all the officer's cloaths, except his ſhirt, and faſten'd the board again ſo dexterouſly, that no body could perceive it. The next morning about eight of the clock, it being broad day-light, the officer perceived his miſtake, and thought he had lain with the devil, when he beheld ſuch a black and frightful figure abed, as the hagged-fac'd old African was. Immediately, he falls to invoking all the he and ſhe-ſaints, and begg'd of 'em to come to his aſſiſtance, and the more the ſlave bid him hold his tongue, for fear of being heard, the more he bray'd like an aſs. At laſt, out of bed he jumps, in a dreadful fright; and looking for his cloaths, with deſign to make haſte out of the houſe, he was perfectly amaz'd when he found they were gone. By this time the people of the houſe were alarm'd and running to ſee what had made ſuch a buſtle, the officer makes no more ado, but wraps himſelf up in one of the ſheets, that he might not be expos'd to the peoples raillery. The poor negro, on the other hand, was as much aſham'd to be known, as the officer, and, for that reaſon took the other ſheet, and wound it about her. Thus, like two figures in the niches of ſome pieces of architecture, they ſtood guarding the chamber-door; and you might as well ſpeak to a mute, as to either of them. Shame had

ſhut

ſhut up their lips; and confuſion metamorphos'd them into ſtone. The noiſe occaſion'd by this diſorder, made the young marquis of T — himſelf run to ſee what was the matter, who, knowing nothing of the intrigue, nor the officer, would needs make him dance thro' the ſtreets in the equipage he was in. His domeſticks follow'd him, hooting and hollowing all the way, as far as the firſt church he came at, where he put in, to hide himſelf from the mob. I can't ſay how the officer got home afterwards; but he was never ſeen in Naples again. The marchioneſs, upon her return, was puzzled how to manage the affair ſo, as to ſalve her reputation. But the negro was immediately clapt into a dungeon, and threaten'd hard, if ſhe would not tell who brought her into my lady's chamber; inſomuch that, at laſt, ſhe named me; and then the matter was huſh'd all of a ſudden.

'Twas not long, before I perceived by my lady's carriage, that her ladyſhip was informed of my roguery; and tho' ſhe affected to appear the ſame to me, I knew, by ſome leers ſhe gave me, that deep revenge was in her thoughts. What confirmed me in this ſuſpicion, was, that ſhe had ceas'd calling for me at the hours ſhe us'd to do, and that ſhe was quite tir'd with

the ſtories I told to divert her. At laſt, her heart was too full; and her paſſion of revenge tranſported her beyond the pleaſure ſhe had ever taken in loving me. Beatrice was entruſted with the ſecret, and had orders to give me a meſs according to cuſtom, which would cure me of all diſtempers. She was mightily ſtartled at the propoſal, and as loth to undertake the devilish charge; but being a thorow-pac'd diſſembler, ſhe pretended, not only to comply with my lady's deſires, but aſſur'd her, that the victim was due to her, inaſmuch as I had had the raſhneſs to affront her. Soon after, coming into my chamber, ſhe wak'd me, and, holding out the porrenger to me,—— here Frank, ſays ſhe; here's a meſs of poiſon for you: I have orders to make you take it, and not ſtir from you, till you are dead. Then, looking upon me, with an air of tenderneſs;——— and, do you think me, ſays ſhe, capable of ſo helliſh a crime? What tho' I have undertaken this horrid commiſſion? Do you think the love I have for you would permit me to execute it? no, I had rather die a thouſand deaths, than ſuch a fact ſhould come into my thought! You are too dear to me! Only take care to clear me of this intrigue; and contrive ſome method for me to ſave your life, and put a trick upon our barbarous miſtreſs.

I con-

I confeſs, I was amaz'd to hear a compliment of this nature. I made uſe of the moſt tender and paſſionate expreſſions I could to aſſure Beatrice, of the obligations ſhe had laid upon me, telling her, that as ſhe had ſaved my life, it ſhould be employ'd in her ſervice; but that, as for the reſt, I could think of no other way, than for her to make my lady believe, I ſuſpected the matter; and that, as ſoon as I was dreſs'd, inſtead of ſwallowing the poiſon, I bolted out of the room, and jump'd out of a window that look'd into the garden; that ſhe run after me, and did what ſhe could, to have me ſtopp'd, crying out, I was a madman; but that it was impoſſible to overtake me; and ſo ſhe did not know what was become of me. Beatrice approved the invention, and play'd her part very dexterouſly. She firſt took care to hide me in her chamber, where nobody ever went but herſelf, and then fell to making a noiſe, and crying out, help, as if ſhe had been ſtuck. The old marchioneſs ran to ſee what was the matter, and hearing of my eſcape, was in ſuch a dreadful rage, that her fury made me tremble, like an aſpin-leaf; and Beatrice told me, afterwards, that ſhe never ſaw the devil in her life, but in the diſtorted eyes of that odious beldam. She tore her hair, knock'd her head againſt the wall,

wall, and ſuppoſing, that, to be reveng'd of her, I would expoſe her inſatiable luſt, ſhe took the deviliſh reſolution of poiſoning herſelf. Beatrice ran to the young marquis's, and deſir'd him to come to his mother's apartment, that moment; if he wou'd ſave her life. He went away directly, but anger and deſpair had prevented the poiſon, and ſo affected the heart of that unhappy lady, that all the remedies of phyſick could not bring her to the uſe of her ſpeech again, which ſhe had loſt. She expir'd about one of the clock in the morning, with hideous cries and groans; and, as it was ſuſpected ſhe was poiſon'd, her body was open'd, but no cauſe of her death diſcovered; only there were ſymptoms of a ſuffocation, occaſioned by anger and deſpair.

They were no leſs concerned to hide the cauſe of the marchioneſs's death, than I was to get out of the cloſet, and waſh away cares and tears, with the reſt of the domeſticks. The corps was carry'd, without any ſtate, to the pariſh-church, where it was bury'd, the next day about ſeven of the clock in the morning. Beatrice, who had brought me the news of my lady's death, with a joy that ſurpriz'd me, gave me very ill notions of her tenderneſs for me, by ſhewing none at all for the lady to whom

ſhe

ſhe was indebted for all ſhe had in the world: and this, indeed, damp'd that little love I had for her. However, I took particular care not to let her perceive my indifference; becauſe ſhe ſtood me in greater ſtead now than ever, being made the young marchioneſs's houſe-keeper, whoſe lord was a young deboſhe, that never ſtaid long at home, but was oftener at Rome and Venice, than at Naples. The young lady, on the contrary, was ſo religious, and liv'd ſo regular a life, that ſhe was admired for it by the whole city. Her charity and good works were the commou talk; and her houſe was a kind of rendezvous for pious perſons. In ſhort, the very ſervants were obliged to be ſober and careful, the waſting of but a cruſt of bread never going unpuniſhed.

I knew ſo well how to behave myſelf, and had learnt ſo much of my lady's humour, that I was not to ſeek how to get the length of her foot. She was a great admirer of diſcourſes of divinity, and eſpecially ſuch as concerned predeſtination; and whether ſhe did it out of curioſity, or to ſhew her great wit, ſhe was continually ſtarting queſtions upon the moſt ſublime ſubjects of divinity. I was often preſent at the conferences that were held in her chamber; and obſerving, one day, that I was

very

very attentive on what was ſaid, as ſoon as the company was gone, ſhe ask'd me, whether I had any notion of ſuch diſcourſes? Thereupon, for anſwer, I made her a kind of recapitulation of all that had been ſaid, concluding with a few of my own ſentiments, which ſeem'd to her ſo noble and ſublime, that ſtepping back with an air of ſurprize, what d'ye mean? Frank, ſays ſhe; are you my page, or a doctor? Tell me quickly who you are; for I will know; and pray ſpeak the truth.

Theſe expreſſions made me wiſh my tongue had been out of my head, when I firſt took upon me to talk to her of divinity. However, my concern did but increaſe my lady's curioſity; and it ſignify'd nothing for me to tell her, that the ſmattering I had, was owing to my memory; and that I had never ſtudied the theological ſciences.—Give me none of your turns and quibbles, ſays ſhe, I'd have known who you are, long ago, if it had not been for the jealous and paſſionate temper of the marchioreſs of T— but that fear is now over; and as long as I have an opportunity at this time, you ſhall not ſtir out of my chamber, till you have told me, whence you come, and how, chance you are a ſervant.

At that, I threw myſelf upon my knees, and begg'd her, not to inſiſt upon the relation of my adventures; but ſhe commanded me to riſe, and begin it.

I muſt then, obey you, madam, ſays I, with an air of confuſion; but my obedience coſt me dear, and I am ſure, you'll hate me, for telling you, that I am the unfortunate ſon of the Chevalier C——, whom the counteſs of P——, your mother, barbarouſly put to death, when ſhe expired. An illuſtrious Grecian ſlave, of the ſame counteſs's, was my mother, who died in bringing me into the world. My infancy coſt thoſe who took care of me, their lives, nor has your father, the count of P—— himſelf, eſcap'd a little of trouble and diſgrace, upon my account. He does not now know me; and after an abſence of ſix years that I was in the ſeminary of the Jeſuits at Rome, where I was brought up, at the charge of the princeſs C——, I appeared before him, under a borrow'd name, and he was pleas'd to place me, himſelf in your houſe, at the inſtances of an old woman, whom I call'd mother, the better to conceal the truth of my birth.

Oh! Oh! is your name Colli, then? reply'd the marchioneſs, riſing very haſtily from her ſeat. Nay, then, it is no longer matter of ſurprize to me, that I was ſo de-

ſirous to talk with you; and I begin to believe, that what Beatrice told me of you, was no fable. I aſſured her, that Beatrice who had ſuſpected the truth of my birth, never ſpoke to me of it but once in her life. The marchioneſs deſired me to avoid as much as poſſible, a diſcourſe of that nature, and told me, that if I had a mind to pleaſe her, I muſt conform myſelf to her will, and obſerve her manner of living.

Beatrice, who did not come into my lady's apartment during this conference, which laſted two hours, asked me a world of queſtions, in the evening, after ſupper. She had found the marchioneſs more melancholy than uſual, and had heard her utter deep ſighs, contrary to her cuſtom; and knew, by thoſe tokens, that ſhe no longer enjoy'd her ordinary peace of mind. She would be put to bed without her ſupper; and ordered her women to leave the room, under pretence her head aked. Beatrice, I ſay, having obſerved this emotion in her lady, preſently ſuſpected, ſhe had entertain'd ſome new paſſion, and ſo was very inquiſitive, to know what had paſs'd between her and me. I was juſt a going to tell her the truth; but conſidering, that my lady might charge me with indiſcretion, and puniſh me accordingly, I invented a ſtory of a pretended indiſpoſition of the

marquis

marquis, who was then at Venice, and and assured Beatrice, that my lady kept me so long in her chamber, only to question me about the customs of my country, and methods in use among the physicians there. I don't know, whether Beatrice was satisfied with my answer, but at least, she pretended so to be, and the next morning, as soon as it was time to go into my lady's chamber, she went to comfort her as to the marquis's pretended sickness; adding, that she had spoke to a man, who left him as well as ever he was in his life. The marchioness was extremely surpriz'd at this compliment, and knew not what answer to make the old governante. What? are you in a dream? Beatrice, says she, or bewitched? that you come and tell me, my lord is ill at Venice! I received a letter from him, last night, dated at Rome; he is in perfect health; and I expect him home this week. Pray, who sent you to me with this lie? Frank told me, that the news was the occasion of your melancholy, reply'd Beatrice; and as I love you extremely, I thought I could do no less than afford your ladyship what comfort I was able. Thank'ye Beatrice, says the marchioness: but Frank had only a mind to laugh at you: it is not good to ask more questions than others are willing to tell us; and men are provided with shifts and turns,

as well as we, to hide their real sentiments, Govern therefore your curiosity; and go and bid Frank come to me.

Away comes Beatrice, into my chamber, and with all the furies in her eyes,—— go, Mr. Rogue, says she, my lady wants to speak with you! Wou'd she would but order me, once, to bring you such a kettle of porrage, as her mother-in-law did! you don't do well, answer'd I, in using such expressions; and I have not deserved such a wish at your hands: if I should acquaint my lady with it, I am sure, you would not be long-liv'd in the house; but God forbid I should do so much harm to a person to whom I am indebted for my life: my easy temper so far recovered Beatrice of her mad fit, that she relented, and flinging her arms about my neck, desired me to forgive a heat, to which my want of sincerity gave birth. She gave me to understand, that it would be of no small importance to me, to live peaceably with her, if I desired to be happy; and that the confidence which I should repose in her, would be fully recompensed. I assured her, I would never do any thing again without her participation, and desired her only to keep silence, and to be in the garden at ten o'clock at night, covered with her mantle; that, lest any body should suspect me, I designed to dress

dress myself likewise in womens cloaths, and therefore, pray'd her to leave a suit of hers in my chamber, in order to facilitate the execution of my enterprize. Having taken my measures, I ran to my lady's apartment; who no sooner saw me, but she smiled. You put a trick upon inquisitive Beatrice, says she to me, and I commend your prudence; we must be upon our guard, lest she guess somewhat of mine and your sentiments: Saying thus, she strok'd her hand over my face; and thereby convinced me, that I was of no esteem with her.

Knowing my lady to be a person of excellent modesty, I durst not presently answer her surprizing declaration: besides, she was endued with prudence enough to stand the torrent of the most violent passion. Wherefore, I contented myself at that time, to speak by my eyes, and to convince my lady by a deep sigh, from the bottom of my heart, that I was capable of the tenderest impressions. She understood that dumb language; and —— you have obliged me, Colli, says she, after having been silent some time; shan't I have cause to fear, that I have too much abandoned myself to the inclination I have for you? You are young, and perhaps, guilty of all the flattery and deceit charged upon men of your age, who

are

are generally fickle and unſincere; or, at leaſt, indiſcreet and imprudent! Oh! what happineſs! if I ſhould not find any of thoſe ill qualities in you! I am naturally good-humoured, and not at all paſſionate; I have lived to this very day, in a perfect indifference to the things of this world; and you ſee, how little I am concerned at my lord's abſence, and how patiently I took my mother's death, I had ſo far ſtudied philoſophy as not to ſet my affections on the things of this world, to the end I might enjoy conſtantly the natural tranquility of my ſoul: But alas, I have not been able to keep my ſelf in that happy ſtate; wretched woman, what will become of me, if knowing all my weakneſs, you give me occaſion to repent, I ever told it you; am I deceived? dear Colli: and what will you ſay to me, to aſſure me of your heart and fidelity? — I'd ſooner loſe my life, anſwered I, than once entertain a thought ſo unjuſt, as that of diſobliging you. No, madam, you reign abſolute monarch in my ſoul; and you ſhall never find me a rebel, nor capable of the leaſt infidelity. But, added I, with eyes full of fire, have n't you a mind to deceive me only, and try whether I was ſo raſh, as to be tranſported by my fancy, to ſo exalted a pitch? why don't you rather choose to ſtab me, than to expoſe me to ſo dangerous

a

a trial! Give me, then, either life or death! and don't let me languiſh thus, long in ſuſpenſe! You ſhall not die, ſays ſhe; and I am ſorry you ſhould entertain an uneaſy thought! I told you, I never loved in my life; nor was I ever ſenſible of the leaſt emotion of tenderneſs for any thing in the world! My lord himſelf, to whom they married me, could never get my eſteem, and I render him, at moſt, no farther duty, than what the law enjoins me; inſomuch that it kills me, when he ſometimes puts me in mind I am his! Long have I ſtruggled with the paſſion the firſt ſight of you gave me! When my mother-in-law took you from me, methought, I was never ſo loth to part with any ſervant in my life! I made ſeveral reflexions on the cauſe of my uneaſineſs, and asked myſelf, (alas, in vain!) why I ſhould prefer you to another? I could never ſatisfy myſelf as to that point: And all the victory I was able to gain of my reſtleſs ſpirit, was, that tho' I could not ſtifle my paſſion at its birth, yet I made a ſhift to conceal it with patience.

Oh! how dear have you coſt me! eſpecially, ſince Beatrice told me, ſhe durſt ſay, I was the Chevalier C——'s child, as well as you; that ſecret, which I now entruſt you with, is of the laſt importance; and it

it would go near to coſt us both our lives, if ever you be ſo raſh as to reveal it.

One day, as I was looking upon my poor mother's jewels, of which my father had made me a preſent, I had a great fancy to open a box, one ſide whereof was for ſnuff: but the bottom was ſo very thick, that I ſuſpected there was ſome myſtery in it. I tried for a whole morning together, but to no purpoſe; and was, at laſt, oblig'd to abandon my enterprize upon my father's coming into the cloſet, to tell me, he had a preſent to make me of the fineſt and genteeleſt page in Naples. I thank'd the count, and aſſured him, that any thing from his hands would be very agreeable to me. Preſently after, he went into my mother-in-law's apartment, and told her of the preſent he deſign'd to make me. Beatrice, who always loved me, as having brought me up from a child, came immediately into my chamber, and, ſmiling, told me, that the marquis of T—— had ſent me in queſt of love in the iſle of Cythara, and that I might bid adieu to my indifference. The jeſt ſerv'd to divert us a little while, till going to my cabinet, I took out the ſnuff-box again, and deſired Beatrice to help me to open it, and ſatisfy my curioſity.

She

She no sooner had the box in her hand, but, trembling,——Ah! madam, says she, what are you going to do? I know what's the inside of this box, and no person in the world can open it, besides myself. I had it made by the Chevalier C——'s orders; and you will see, within the pictures of the Chevalier and the countess your mother. Then, giving a little turn to one of the studs. I was surprized at the beauty of the two pictures I saw. Beatrice could hold no longer, but melted into tears; and I had like to have sunk down at the sight of my mother, whose love for the Chevalier was no secret to me. I desir'd Beatrice to give me a better light into that affair, than I had ever had before; which she promis'd to do, but said, it was then time to wait on my mother in-law; and that, at night, after her lady was in bed, she would come and give me the whole relation.

My lord's absence favouring the design, I thought every minute an hour till Beatrice came. At last, however, she kept her promise but too well for my repose. For, having related to me all that befel the countess my mother, and the Chevalier; what a sad death they both suffered; the escape of the Grecian beauty; your birth; the prodigies of your childhood; and the education bestow'd upon you by

the princeſs C——, the Chevalier's mother, ſhe chang'd her tone, and —— but this is not all the ſecret of theſe two pictures, ſays ſhe, and I ſhall take care to go no farther with it. ——Nay, make an end, Beatrice, ſays I, and don't be ſo imprudent, as to begin a ſtory, and leave me in pain, by breaking off abruptly. I will know all; and what, I beſeech you, can affect me ſo much when known, as your keeping it from me? Prithee, therefore ſpeak: this is the third time I bid you; and you have no reaſon to deny me your confidence in any affair whatever. Beatrice, perceiving I would take no refuſal, told me, at laſt, that the count, whom I took for my father, was not ſo in reality; that my mother, who came of the ancient family of the P——s, had been made a ſacrifice to the old count, who, though very rich, had married her without any fortune; that her parents, who deſign'd her for the cloiſter, had prevailed with her to marry, meerly to be the ſupport of her family; that whilſt ſhe was yet at her father's, the Chevalier C—— had fallen deſperately in love with her; that they entertained the moſt tender paſſion for each other; that this paſſion laſted two years; that I was born a month before my mother was married to the old count; that ſhe, the ſame Beatrice that ſpoke to me, had taken

and

and brought me up in the country; that my mother had deceived the old count, by making him believe ſhe was with child, in a month after they were married; that ſhe went on with her pretended great belly for nine months; that a truſty midwife was then employ'd; that when I was twenty months old, I was carried home, and the old count perſuaded, that I was but ten; that the old count, believing me to be his own, dandled and was very fond of me, calling me his heireſs, and the ſtaff of his old age; and that a nurſe was taken into the houſe for me, where I was kept till my mother's death; and then one of my father's ſiſters took me with her into a monaſtery of the ladies of St. Frances of Rome. What I tell you, is ſo true, added Beatrice, that you need only look upon the Chevalier C---'s picture and your own, to judge of the reſemblance there is between you. Is not that your mouth? Whoſe are thoſe charming full black eyes? There's your forehead, and the exact mould of your face. This lovely freſh colour you have of your mother, who was extremely fair. Your head is every bit the Chevalier's; and I have admired a thouſand times, how it could be, that this great likeneſs never inſpired the good old count with jealouſy! 'Tis true, continued Beatrice, your mother's marriage

obliged the Chevalier to go and serve the order of Maltha, where he remained almost three years, and then returned to Naples with the slave Zebina, of whom he made a present to the countess of P—— that slave was the firebrand which kindled such a dreadful flame, that nothing could extinguish it, but the death of the loveliest persons in the world. The history Beatrice had given me, left but a slight impression upon my mind, by reason I considered, that servants are very often guilty of contriving stories, the better to recommend them to their mistresses, and engage them to make them their confidents; and that such old ones, especially, as Beatrice, are generally good at invention and dreams: but you were no sooner shew'd me, but I was seiz'd with a fit of trembling; I begun to think she had told me the truth; and was so much the more confirmed in my belief, in that I could never conceal the trouble I conceived upon your account.

What think'ye of the relation I have given you, dear Colli? added the marchioness, with eyes drowned in tears; are you my brother? or are you not? May I give the reins to my passion, without wounding my duty? or must I be banished the sight of you, for fear of making a hole through it? Oh! tell me? why did you come to Naples?

and

and, who brought you into this house, to make me the happiest creature of my sex.

These expostulations were followed with sighs, enough to break the most insensible heart! The story I had heard had struck me dumb; and as I stood, with my eyes fixed on the marchioness, and did not answer a syllable, he asked me again, what I thought of her fate? Not so bad as my own, says I; for I bear all the burden of this fatal confidence! Yes! If you are my sister, I am dead! And 'tis impossible for me to confine my love within so narrow bounds! I love you infinitely; and those sentiments of tenderness that could find degrees in your heart, found none in mine! I saw you, I sacrificed all to you as soon; and my very reason, which had always stood by me, was gone; think ye, then, madam, that I am capable of so much love for a sister? No, no, it must be for a more common name, that such flames glow continually in my breast! And, assuredly, we are tied with the bonds of love, and not by those of blood! Beatrice is a wicked wretch for inventing that fable! As if it were not common, for persons to be alike, without any manner of relation by blood! Besides, a thousand natural reasons will convince us, that a woman may have a

child

child by a husband ſhe does not love, very like her gallant, whom ſhe does love! and as I told you before, Beatrice has her reaſons, for ſuch kind of inſinuations. However, ſince I am undone! What ſignifies it for me to keep a ſecret from you, which, perhaps, may ſet you to rights in that affair?

Beatrice loves me, madam, ſays I; and has given me unqueſtionable proofs of her affection. 'Tis true, ſo far as I judged ſhe might be uſeful to me in the raiſing my fortune, I pretended to anſwer her deſires; and this alone induced her to endeavour to make me happy, by placing me to you; but perceiving that I entirely devoted my ſelf to your ſervice, and on the contrary, ſlighted the demonſtrations ſhe gave me of her love, ſhe grew jealous that you were become ſenſible, and could not forbear telling me, that if I regarded any advances you might make me, I ſhould be undone. Leſt this ſeem incredible, ſhe has appointed me to meet her in Venus-arbour in the garden, this very evening, at ten of the clock. If you pleaſe to put yourſelf to the trouble of coming, you may be a witneſs of our diſcourſe, and give credit to nothing but what you ſhall hear.

The marchioneſs was very much ſurprized at this news, and began to be a little diſ-

truſtful,

truſtful. Take care, ſays ſhe, ſtepping away from me, that our converſation take no wind: I'll be at the place you mention'd juſt now. I wiſh Beatrice has told me a ſalſhood! But what ſignifies wiſhing? 'Tis but too true, that we are united by blood: I thought ſo, indeed, when I firſt heard it, and you have ſo confirmed me in the opinion, that you'll find it a hard matter ever to ſhake my faith; ſo that even ſuppoſing it to be falſe, the time it would take you up to diſſuade me, would infallibly foil you; adieu, remember, at ten of the clock to-night; and Oh! that I may find you to be what I ought to deſire you.

I went, from my ladies, directly to Beatrice's chamber, where the old beldam expected me with as much impatience, as Penelope did Ulyſſes, from the ſiege of Troy. She had been ſeveral times, at the marchioneſs's door, to liſten, whether we had done; and had obſerved us to have been a long while ſilent, and that we had an air of grief and melancholy.——Would any body, ſays ſhe, in a railing tone, expect more ſincerity from you, than you ſhew'd yeſterday? Good-lack a-day! our Frank is no ſmall fool; and ſince the loveliest marchioneſs in this kingdom cloſets him for three hours together, I ought not to expect any farther diſcourſe with him; but

but on the contrary, must look upon him as our master, and, in my turn, desire him to use his good offices with my lady, in my behalf.

You have no reason to say so, Beatrice, answere I; and how ridiculous is it for one of your age, to trouble your head, whether I love, or am beloved? or not? Ought you not rather to be content with my behaviour towards you? And am not I the same to-day, as you have known me to be, ever since I first saw you? You may find me, now and then, a little cold; but you know, there is a time for all things, and every devil has his day; and so have you. Let us, I conjure you, remain in friendship, and not torment one another. Do you remember the meeting I appointed you to-night? Have you laid a suit in my chamber, as I desired you? Venus arbour, remember, I'll expect you there, and there we'll settle a great many affairs.

Beatrice assured me, she thought long e'er the time came, and desired me to stay for her in the gallery, before I went down into the garden. I was so impatient to hear her account of my birth, and for my lady's being undeceived as to that point, by listening, that I hasten'd my supper, and ran into a corner of the gallery, a full half-hour before the time. The night was not yet shut

in close enough for our purpose, and so I went, in my womans habit, and placed myself just by a window, that lighted the stair-case. As I was tall enough for a man, and look'd much taller in my new dress, one of the marquis's domesticks, who had not follow'd his master, by reason of a slight illness, going to my lady's apartment, to see one of her chamber-maids, was frighten'd at the sight of me, and fell a crossing himself as fast as he could: But gathering courage, and coming directly up to my face, I put on a fierce and frightful look, and moved towards him very gently and and gravely. Thereupon, the fellow, taking me to be some spirit broke out of hell or purgatory, cried out as loud as he could bawl, and fainted away. The noise made by his fall, made some of the domesticks, who were in a hall joining to the gallery, run to see what it was; and, for fear of being discovered, I ran to the place of my rendezvous. Being come near Venus-arbour, I perceived a man making the best of his way thither, to hide himself, and immediately resolved to serve him as I had done the other. Having placed myself for that purpose, at the door of the arbour, I made such a noise, that my gentleman scamper'd back as fast as he could. Who should this be, but the young marchioness,

who had thus disguised herself, lest any body should know her.

The marchioness was perfectly ignorant of my metamorphosis, and I of hers; and as she was naturally fearful, and had never been at a rendezvous in her life, she took me for a hideous monster of a woman, and fancied I was the marchioness her mother-in-law's ghost. She made the best of her way, therefore, to her apartment; but going thro' the gallery, she found almost all the servants about the fellow I frighted, whom they could not for their lives bring to himself. Beatrice was there among the rest, who taking my lady for a page, gave her the key of her chamber, and bid her fetch such and such waters. The marchioness made no more ado, but readily took it, for fear of being discovered, and away she went to her apartment. Beatrice find the page did not come back, presently imagined, that he was tippling the waters himself, and shuffled to her chamber, in a great rage, where, when she saw neither page, nor key, she made a devilish hurricane, and ran up and down the house, in search of the page. Mean time, being in Venus-arbour, and hearing a great noise in the gallery, though at a distance, I presently concluded, that I had made the disturbance, by frighting Iacinto; and as I was naturally impatient,

impatient, and saw nothing appear, according to promise, I e'en returned to my chamber, by a private stair-case, in order to throw off my female habit, resume that of a page, and appear in the gallery, among the rest, for fear of being suspected.

As therefore, I was going from my chamber, without a candle, (the night was extremely dark) I felt somebody take hold of my foretop, and immediately after, I was saluted with such a blow o' the chaps, that I thought they had dashed my teeth down my throat. The blood gush'd from my nose like water out of a pump; and soon made me look like raw-head and bloody-bones. And which, was yet more surprizing to me than all the rest, I had no sooner received the blow, but I heard somebody say, with a hoarse and angry voice, — give me the key of my chamber, you rogue. Not knowing any voice, and thinking I might be murdered there in the dark, I clapt my hand upon my dagger, which we are scarce ever without, in Naples, and drawing the same, sheath'd it in the guts of the unfortunate Beatrice, who, finding her self wounded, screamed out loud enough for me to know her, and so gave me warning to march off the ground, to prevent my being discovered.

The ſtair-caſe, where this unhappy wound was given, being near the marchioneſs's apartment, ſhe heard the noiſe, and ran to ſee what was the matter, taking the girl that Iacinto was going to viſit, along with her. But, what a diſmal ſight was it for the poor lady to behold her governante expiring, and all of a gore blood; all the women that were about her fell a howling, and whinneling, and I went and pretended to out-do 'em all in cries and tears; I appeared all over bloody, and had ſo ſmear'd my ſhirt, that I looked as if I was ſtabb'd in ten places: The marchioneſs no ſooner ſaw me in that pickle, but ſhe fell into fits, whereupon the women put her and Beatrice to bed. I thought it now time for me to go to bed too; which I did, but had no great matter of reſt.

I was ſo griev'd at the accident which had happened to my poor lady, that I never once thought of what I had done to poor Beatrice. I durſt not riſe, and go to her apartment, by reaſon the ſurgeon that was ſent to me, had bled me, and ordered me to keep my chamber two or three days; but as ſoon as ever it was day, my lady ſent to know how I did, and bid the maid tell me, ſhe would come and ſee me as ſoon as ſhe was up. Accordingly, about nine of the clock, ſhe and an aunt of hers, who hearing

of

of the noiſe that had happened in the palace, came, betimes in the morning, to ſee her niece, entered my chamber. That lady was the count of P——'s ſiſter, a rich widow, had no children, and perfectly doated on the marchioneſs of T.——She ſent conſtantly, every day, to know how ſhe did, and the fellow that came that morning being informed, by the ſervants, of Beatrice's misfortune, ran directly to his lady, and told her the whole ſtory. She immediately took coach, and went to her niece's apartment, to ſee how ſhe did. The marchioneſs was abed, when ſhe came, very much indiſpoſed; and having examined Iacinto, touching the beginning of the fray, they could not tell where to fix the murder. They went to Beatrice, who was half-dead, and all they could learn of her, was, that ſhe was ſtabbed by a page to whom ſhe had given the key of her chamber, to fetch ſome waters, to bring Iacinto to himſelf; that ſhe met the page upon the back-ſtairs that belonged to my lady's apartment; and that he did it, only becauſe ſhe gave him a little box o' th' ear, for tarrying ſo long.

Hereupon the marchioneſs concluded, that this was a piece of deſign'd villany. She knew well enough, that ſhe had received the key of the chamber from Beatrice, diſguiſed like a page; but that it was not ſhe

that

that ſtabb'd her. Then ſhe began to ſuſpect the truth; and having adminiſtered what comfort ſhe was able, to poor Beatrice, and deſired the ſurgeons, who were to come to dreſs her wound a ſecond time, to take a particular care of her, and ſpare nothing, ſhe ordered all the ſervants to be lock'd in, in order to be examined, and, in the firſt place, came with her aunt into my chamber. That lady had been one of the princeſs C——'s great cronies, and the only confident of the ſecrets of her whole life. Among the reſt, that of my birth had been entruſted with her, at large; but ſhe knew nothing at all of the marchioneſs's. Her great age, and many infirmities, had obliged her to keep her chamber ſeveral years, ſo that ſhe had never ſeen me in her life: Nevertheleſs, ſhe had no ſooner caſt her eye upon me, but ſhe ſtarted back, and ſcream'd out. The marchioneſs apprehended nothing of the real occaſion: but fancy'd, that, as ſhe was very infirm, the fatigue had brought ſome pains upon her. She deſired her to retire to her apartment, and asked me, as ſhe was going out of my chamber, whether I was not wounded? And whether the ſurgeon, who had been to ſee me, found me dangerous ill? Her manner of ſpeaking, join'd with her looks, were enough to convince any one, that ſhe had a mind

mind to talk with me alone; but could find no opportunity for't all that day, her aunt not leaving her, but finding her employment till night, when ſhe went home, and deſired the marchioneſs to come and paſs the following day in her palace.

Mean time, all the domeſticks were detained priſoners, except a poor wretch, a native of Florence, who, fearing the intended inquiſition, was run away. As ſoon as it was known, that he had made his eſcape, the ſuſpicion of the murder fell altogether upon him, and the marchioneſs was adviſed to ſet her ſervants at liberty, and let the affair take as little wind as poſſible. However, all the forms of juſtice were executed againſt the poor Florentine; and ſome of his companions declared, that they had ſeen him wipe his bloody dagger, and that he ſeem'd to be in a great diſorder and confuſion. In a word, nothing was neglected to render him as guilty as poſſible, and to confirm the ſuſpicion occaſioned by his Flight. Three days after, he was hang'd in effigy before the palace; and Beatrice, who died of her wound the day before this execution, was lamented, not only by her miſtreſs, but generally by all the ſervants in the houſe.

Being obliged to keep my chamber, I was ignorant of theſe tranſactions till ſome

days

days afterwards. 'Tis true, about eleven of the clock at night my lady and her aunt had visited me, the marchioness came alone into my chamber, and having drawn my curtain, and wak'd me, I was amazed to see her put her finger upon my mouth, as a signal for my silence. She sat down close by me, and speaking as low as possible, for fear of being heard by a slave, who look'd after me, and who was asleep in a little closet just by my bed-side, she told me, that she had long'd, with a great deal of impatience, to talk with me; that she and I were the cause of all the misfortunes that happen'd in the house; and, that she suspected, that poor Beatrice had received her death's wound from my hand. After this, she related to me, how she had seen Iacinto in the gallery, how she had disguis'd her self, and how she was frighted by a spirit, as she was going by Venus-arbour. Then, having informed me of Beatrice's mistake, in giving her the key of the chamber, she concluded, with assuring me, that we must think of parting, before the marquis came home; that she was sensible, the world would give an ugly turn to an accident of that nature; that the marquis, who was of a wicked and malicious temper, would take hold of that opportunity, to be revenged of her indifference; that, indeed, she could wil-

willingly undergo any thing he could inflict, but that ſhe could never endure to ſee me expoſed to his reſentment; that I muſt therefore, think of a retreat, and tell her where I had a mind to be, to the end ſhe might continue to lend me her aſſiſtance.

I was about a quarter of an hour, before I made any anſwer to ſuch a dreadful propoſal! The foreſight of the blow that threatned me, quite deprived me of my ſenſes! But, at laſt, I made a ſhift to whine out the following expreſſions! —— You would have me, then, go from you, madam! Ah! Who is it brings me ſo ſevere an order? Is it you? or, is it one of the infernal furies? Alas! dear madam! whither would you ſend me? or, where would you expoſe me? Why didn't you rather deliver me into the hands of juſtice, to be executed inſtead of the Florentine in effigie! But it is time for me to ſurrender myſelf, and own, that I am the man that murdered Beatrice! Yes! 'Twas I that ſheath'd my dagger in her bowels! And tho' I did it in my own defence, taking her for a thief that had made me all over bloody; and tho' I am heartily griev'd, that I did not know that unfortunate woman, whom I ought to reſpect as long as I live, I will tell the judges ſo many circumſtances of malice and hate, that I will force 'em to take away a

life, that is a burden to me, ſince I can no longer employ it in your ſervice, but am bid to leave you, and flee your preſence! Ah, Beatrice, how is your death doubly revenged upon the murderer, by this moſt exquiſite piece of cruelty! No: I am, by no means, capable of obeying your orders, and you command a thing in vain, which is not in my power to perform.

I perceive, ſays the marchioneſs, that you are not prudent, and that I have made you too familiar; but Colli, you muſt have more wit; and 'tis not now time to dally; you muſt go, and you muſt go very ſpeedily too; you owe me this act of obedience; and I will endeavour to make you amends for the ſubmiſſive manner you ſhall do it in. Do you think, I have a mind to ſend you away, never to ſee you more? I muſt firſt bid adieu to love and nature, you ſhall be always dear to me, I promiſe you; and I'll take care, you ſhall want for nothing as long as I live. 'Tis only to ſecure myſelf from the inſults and affronts of a brutiſh husband, that I do this; and becauſe I would not be in continual fear for you; i'll tell him, you deſired leave to go to Rome, to meet him, and give him an account what had befallen poor Beatrice: mean time, i'll conſult with my aunt, which way you had beſt go, and what aſyle is moſt convenient,

as

as well for your ſafety, as for your ſending me news of your health.

I was forced to yield to theſe arguments of my lady, and began to be perſuaded, that I muſt not expect to live, if the marquis, who was expected home in three or four days, ſhould be once informed, that I was the occaſion of all that diſturbance. All the domeſticks bore me a mortal grudge a'ready, and the chamber maid, who was Iacinto's miſtreſs, told a thouſand tales of my lady's carriage towards me. She even inſinuated to her fellow-ſervants, that it muſt needs be me that kill'd the old governante, by the mark I had of a box o'th' ear. So that, at laſt, I reſolved to do juſt as the marchioneſs would have me. As ſoon, therefore, as it was light, I run to Roſalia's lodgings, and told her all that had happened, and that I was going away. The poor girl was extremely ſurprized to hear, that I muſt leave Naples; for ſhe loved the place entirely, and had kept herſelf chaſt, ever ſince my preferment, by the continual ſupport I gave her. My flight made her deſperate, and when ſhe conſidered ſhe was now going to want my help, and had nothing now to live upon, ſhe would fain have laid violent hands upon herſelf, and no longer ſurvive her diſgrace. I comforted her as well as I could, deſiring her not to aban-

don herself to despair, and promising her to do all I could to make her easy, and to prevent her falling into necessity, by getting her a place at the marchioness's. All the uneasiness I had at this juncture, was, that the count of P——, who went very often to the marchioness's, might happen to meet Rosalia, in her lady's apartment, and not think well of a courtisan's serving a lady of distinction. Troubled at this thought, I returned to the palace, in the evening, after having spent the day in visiting some of my friends in town, whom I told, that I was going to Rome. Understanding, when I was got home, that my lady call'd for me, I ran to her apartment, and found several servants with her, before whom she declared, that she design'd to send me to meet her spouse, then upon his return to Rome; and that I must make all possible diligence in fitting out, for that I must begin my journey the next morning. I made her a low bow, and went to my chamber, to pack up my things, and wait for a private conversation with the marchioness. Nor did the marchioness much tire my patience; for as soon as ever she had got rid of her women, she came, and assured me, that all things were ready for my voyage; that there was a barque in the harbour ready to sail for Maltha; that she had resolved to

send

ſend me to that iſland, with letters of recommendation to the grand-prior C——, brother of the princeſs who had brought me up, and my father's uncle, and alſo ſome memoirs relating to my birth and deſcent. The marchioneſs's aunt had been and was ſtill, the beſt friend the grand-prior had in the world. The letters I was charged with on the part of that lady were, therefore, ſufficient credentials; and as 'tis a privilege of that illuſtrious family, for their natural children to be admitted into the order of Maltha, I began to fancy my ſelf already, a knight of that name. The marchioneſs gave me her picture ſet round with diamonds, and a purſe of five hundred piſtoles, and aſſured me, ſhe would act in concert with her aunt, in the raiſing my fortune. I remember, the old lady laſt mentioned, when I took my leave of her, embraced me, and ſaid, I muſt loſe you then, juſt as I begin to know you! The princeſs C—— gave me your picture, when you was in the ſeminary at Rome; and the only reaſon I ſcream'd out, when I firſt ſaw you at my niece's, was, becauſe I found you at a time when I could get no manner of advice of you! My late illuſtrious friend died very full of grief, that ſhe could do you no good; and I inherit her good will and affection! Approve yourſelf an honeſt man,

man, and you ſhall have no cauſe to murmur at your fate! —As I was declaring to that lady the infinite obligations ſhe had laid upon me, and that I would ſtick to the letter of her's and her niece's commands, the marchioneſs came to tell me, that a ſlave, whom ſhe had to attend me, was gone to carry my things on board the barque. Hereupon, with tears in my eyes, I begg'd of my good lady, to take Roſalia into her houſe, and told her in few words, how much I had been beholden to her. She commended my acknowledgment, and deſired her aunt to take her into her ſervice, as judging it more convenient ſhe ſhould be there, leſt her beauty ſhould ſtrike the marquis, and occaſion ſome uneaſineſs between them. I had but juſt time to write to Roſalia, deſiring her to go and wait on the counteſs of P——, but I had the ſatisfaction of having prevented her falling into extreme want before I ſet out. I never was ſo melancholy and concerned in my life, as at that time. I went into the counteſs of P——'s coach, with eyes drown'd in tears, and had no ſooner embarked, but we weigh'd anchor. We got out of the harbour in an hour's time, which was about nine of the clock of Friday morning, St. Francis's day. Having ſailed about three or four leagues, by favour of a ſide wind, the

the wind chopped about, at two in the afternoon; so that we were forced to bolt to and again till night, when we cast anchor, and lay by, being then about fourteen miles from Naples, off of cape Palinure.

The wind continuing contrary all night, I grew weary of the ship; and the coasts promising very fair for sport, I went to our captain, and engaged him to go on shoar with me, to see if we could make no use of our fowling-pieces. We went a great way up into the forest, till, at last, the walk we were in led us to a very regular castle, for its fortifications both of art and nature. We had no sooner got sight of this castle, but some country-fellows came up to us, and asked us, what was our business there? and whom we wanted? we answer'd 'em, that being obliged, by contrary winds, to cast anchor upon their coasts, we had landed, to admire the beauty of the place, and as we came thro' the Forest, we at last, espied that castle, which we should be very glad to see. Then I desired one of the clowns, who seem'd to me to have the most reason and good manners, to let me speak to the owner of the castle. He replied, that the owner was a great lord of Naples, that never came there but once a year, and that in the spring; but that the marchioness

was

was arrived there about an hour ago, and was gone to bed, being fatigu'd with her journey, which she had made in the night. As my dear lady was never out of my mind, I could not hear the word marchioness named, but presently I took it to be my lady, as if no body else had deserved that title: I enquired after name; and tho' the rusticks told it me twenty times over, after their barbarous manner, they so murdered it, that I had not the least notion thereof. Upon this I pray'd the captain to stay a little, while I paid my respects to the lady; but, how was I confounded at the sight of the marchioness of T———. I threw my self at her feet, and would fain have kiss'd 'em. The captain, who was an eye-witness of my behaviour, imagined I had lost my senses, and could think no other of my extravagances. On the other hand, the marchioness was so amazed to see me there, that she could neither ask me what I did in her castle, nor what accident had brought me thither. At last, both recovering from our surprize, she conducted me into her closet, where, after I had given her an account of my voyage, she assured me, that as soon as I was gone, she received an express from the marquis, ordering her to go and wait for him at Palinure, where she expected him in a few days; and that

she

she set out immediately, as well in point of duty, as to sooth the melancholy she conceived upon my account.

I look'd upon this order from the marquis, as a very bad omen! and assured my lady, that I was apprehensive, some malicious persons had instill'd ill notions into my lord's head, with respect to her; and that he was resolute enough, to have a design upon her life; which seem'd to me the more probable, in that he had ordered her to this place of retirement, where solitude might increase his ill humour. 'Tis all one to me, says she; I fear nothing; I have loved you no otherwise than as a brother, and therefore my conscience is very easy as to that matter. 'Tis true, any body that knew all the secret steps I have taken, to inform myself of the truth, and to converse with you, might be apt to censure me; but I could not forbear doing as I did; and 'tis owing to my stars, that ever I erred, in the least, from my duty. Besides, no creature in the world knew any thing of my affection for you, except Beatrice; and indeed her knowledge of it gave me some uneasiness, Not but that my fear of her, I dare say, was very ill-grounded; by reason I always found her the discreetest person I ever met with. Thus am I ready to receive my lord

without a thought of being questioned by him, about you.

She added, that as soon as I was gone from her aunt's, they both went into her closet, and that there having found my picture in a frame of filagreen-wrought gold, she asked for it, and with much ado, obtained it; that upon sight of that picture, the countess of P —— had told her all the particulars of my life, and confirm'd all that Beatrice had said, except what related to the trick her mother had put upon the old count of P——, in pretending she was his child. Our conversation having lasted till three of the clock in the afternoon, the weather then changed, and the captain sent me word, that he could tarry no longer, for it was high time we were aboard. That sort of men are but one degree better than brutes, and will be obey'd without contradiction. So, considering I could not help myself, I took my leave of my lady, with a thousand protestations of an inviolable friendship, and rejoined my captain, who told me he'd engage to land me in the isle of Maltha, in less than four and twenty hours, if the wind continued. The ship's crew had expected our return with great impatience, and we were no sooner embarked, but we set sail for Messina, which

place

place we discovered the next morning, as soon as 'twas light. We were becalm'd between the fare of Messina and the isle of Lipari, and lay by, expecting the noon-breeze, which rises when the sun is in the height of its course. Mean while, the whole crew betook themselves to pass away the time, by telling of stories. Some related the dangers they had gone thro' by sea: Others discours'd of trade and merchandizing; and others, again, diverted themselves by telling their dreams: I was the only silent person in the ship, who, having a book in my hand, took no manner of notice of their foolish talk. Ametli, the slave the marchioness had given me, made one among 'em, and was as busy with his tongue as the best of 'em; for in those places, they are glad to hear any diverting story, without regarding the person that tells it. This slave, who was a merry, facetious fellow, and a Frank by nation, told 'em, as well as he could, in his Frank tongue, that he had dreamt, that he was free, and that his master was a slave in his place; that he had carried him into his country, where his mother and brother were very glad to see him; that they had obliged him to lie with his master; and, that the next day he met with one of his sisters that had been in the Seraglio at Con-

ſtantinople, whom he had never ſeen in his life, but of whom his mother had ſpoke to him very often. He added a thouſand other particulars of his dream. Scarce had he made an end of his ſtory, but we were ſurprized by a Turkiſh brigantine, who came upon us unawares; and, after having chain'd us, they took all we had that was worth taking, ſet fire to our barque, ſail'd for Zante, and arrived at Patras, in two days. I ſhall not trouble my readers with an account of what we did to defend our ſelves, for which we had no time, the Turks being aboard of us, before we perceiv'd 'em. All I could do, was, to hide the marchioneſs's picture, and to abandon my equipage, in which they found ſo much money, that they gave me the worſt treatment, to make me propoſe a ranſom. Ametli was the only perſon pleas'd with this unfortunate adventure. He preſently made himſelf known to the captain of the brigantine, whom to his great happineſs, he found to be his mother's brother. Ametli had been taken by the gallies of Maltha, when he was about twelve years of age. At thirteen or fourteen, the chains were put on him, and he was expoſed to ſale to the merchants of Naples, who deal in men's fleſh. Being young, and very well ſhaped, the old marchioneſs bought him, and he

had

had been in her palace twelve or thirteen years, when the marchioness made me a present of him, to attend me to Maltha. He was one of the jollieſt fellows that ever I met with, and, at the ſame time, a very induſtrious ſlave. All the while I was in the marchioneſs's houſe, he was ſo over-officious to ſerve me, that he was jealous, if any other ſlave did any thing for me. He was overjoy'd, when his lady told him, ſhe had given him to me, and that if he took care of me, ſhe would give him his liberty, upon my return, which would be in a few years. The hopes of his liberty made him ſo very ſtudious to pleaſe me, that I never had occaſion to make the leaſt complaint of him. His firſt care, after he had made himſelf known, was to cauſe one of my ſuits of cloaths to be returned me, and to rid me of the chain that bound my hands behind me. He told me, he was not able to obtain my liberty of his uncle, who was, as I ſaid before, captain of the brigantine; but that we were going to Petras, where he was born and bred, and where his mother and one of his brothers ſtill lived; and that he would make my ſlavery ſo eaſy that I ſhould quite forget Naples. I thank'd him for his extraordinary civility, and deſired him not to ſuffer me to be ſent away from him, nor ſold to the merchants of Con-

Conſtantinople; by reaſon, I told him, 'twould be much eaſier for me to ſend to my lady from the Morea, than from Romania; aſſuring him, that I ſhould never be unmindful of the obligations he would lay upon me, by granting my requeſt in that particular. He ſwore, that I ſhould be ſatisfied of his good offices; and the truth is, he was as good as his word: For the change of his fortune, upon his deliverance from bondage, made none at all in his mind, nor ever took from his acknowledgments towards me. And he was a Turk, not ſo Turkiſh upon ſuch an occaſion, as a great many Chriſtians, who are humble enough in diſgrace, but in the leaſt proſperity, grow intolerably inſolent, and ſcorn to look upon their beſt friends.

As ſoon as we were arrived, the Turkiſh captain went to give the governor of the town an account of his prize, and of the number of ſlaves he had taken. We were immediately ordered into a Baſar, which is a kind of market-hall for that inhumane traffick. 'Tis the cuſtom of that country, to be expoſed to ſale quite naked, without any regard to the modeſty of women, or the deference they ought to have even for nature: But Ametli did not ſave me the ſhame of appearing in that condition, but procured me to be bought by his mother, and

and went with me to the Basar, to shew me the misery of my companions. I was then in my own cloaths, and it was with regret that Ametli came and told me, I must yield to my bad fortune, and put on a white dress, as a mark of my slavery. This beginning did not seem very hard to me; I took the habit they assign'd me, with all the tranquillity imaginable, and made o manner of comp aint. My mistress, who was a comely gentlewoman, about sixty Years of age, a mussulman and perfectly bigotted to the superstitions of the laws of Mahomet, had me into the garden, and ordered me to take care of the flowers, of which she was a great admirer. Her eldest son was the famousest corsair of the country, and his wife and two women slaves lived at his mother's. One of those slaves was a native of Provence, and the other of Messina; both very handsome, and very witty. Tho' it is very dangerous for slaves to speak to their master's wives, whether lawful, or otherwise, I found means to talk with the Provencale, who gave me the following account of her slavery.

She liv'd at Marseilles, with an aunt, to whom her parents, at their death, had committed the charge of her Education; and she always had a share in the acts of Devotion and abstinence. When she was

about

about fifteen or sixteen years of age, a captain of a gally, whose name was M——— hrit told her she was handsome. Gabrielle (for that was her name) made the defence common to her sex; but the captain soon brought her to reason, assuring her, that her aunt did wrong to her fortune, by bringing her up in retirement and ignorance. I never knew a handsome woman without a tincture of vanity, and there is hardly any beauty but expects to be happy. She hearken'd to the lessons of that dangerous master, and soon became a most perfect mistress. It was late before the aunt discovered this commerce; and Gabrielle having been at several matches, with her lover, in the country, had eaten a fruit there which did not agree with her; insomuch that she was obliged to leave her aunt's, and to go to her lover's estate, near Besiers, in Languedoc.

She unfortunately chose to go by sea, for expedition sake; and a wind from land blowing very hard, (which is common in the gulf of Lions) they were forced to run before the wind all night, and found themselves, the next morning, by break of day, upon the coasts of Barbary. An Algerine, with whom the French were at war, took the barque, and ten persons that were on board her, and carry'd 'em into Algiers; and

and Ametli's brother having put into that harbour to refit, was invited to dine with his old friend the Algerine, who, as the manner of the Turks is, offered him presents, and gave him the most beautiful of his slaves. Gabrielle, tho' with child, pleas'd the Grecian best, and was carried to Patras, and presented to Ametli's mother, who received her with great marks of friendship, and treated her, ever after, with extraordinary civility. This story she told me about a week after I had been in the same house with her, at a time when our master and mistresses were gone to prayers, on the evening of the Vigil of one of their holidays.

One day, as soon as I had watered my flowers, I sat down upon a grass-plot, ruminating upon the sadness of my fate, and, at last, pull'd out the marchioness's picture from under my armpit, where I generally carried it; and having considered it very attentively, I was touch'd to the quick at the remembrance of the original, and of my own misfortunes. Asen's wife, who perceived me from a window, was very curious to know what I had in my hand, and suspected it might be some jewels of great value, and that I was a man of a distinguish'd character. As she was not suffered to speak to me, she found means to

put on Gabriel's cloaths, and being told by that slave, where she sometimes talk'd with me, she went thither so seasonably, that as I was going to the Bagno, the place in which all the slaves in the town were shut up, she took hold of me, and told me, she wanted the jewels I had, which if I would not deliver up by fair means, I should by foul; and that, therefore, I had best to do it, without making a noise; adding, that 'twas as much as my life was worth to complain, or so much as speak of this adventure.

All that I could do, was, to take the opportunity of the dusk, to secure the picture, and give her the box; I assured her withal, that I was extremely glad those jewels had fallen into her hands; and that if I could have done it without a crime, I had presented her with 'em long before. She thank'd me very civilly, and gave me, in return, a string of ten crystal beads, which the Turks make use of at their prayers. They were strung upon a gold wire, and enrich'd with a ring set round with very fine Turcois-stones. That loss did not much disturb me, who was overjoy'd that I had kept the picture of my dear lady. I neither reflected on the loss of the box, nor on the present Asen's wife had made me; but wrapt up the picture in one corner of

of my mantle, till the next day, when I got a goldſmith to make me a ſilver box, which coſt me one and thirty Medins, or nine French Livres; to pay for which, I had ſold my ſtring of beads, and had ſome money left, which I laid out upon a little linen, which I very much wanted, by reaſon my cheſts had been plundered, and nothing at all left me. Tho' my condition was pretty eaſy; I found it much more unpleaſant than ſlaviſh; becauſe I was deprived of the pleaſure of going out, either to get money, or contrive my eſcape. I was confin'd all day, and melancholy began to appear in my countenance. My ſtomach was quite gone, and the Negro that uſed to bring me my victuals, perceiving I did not eat, but fell away, acquainted my old miſtreſs with it, who immediately ſent for me, to examine into the cauſe of my melancholy. I was conducted into her apartment, where I found her upon a rich bed of yellow velvet thick laced with ſilver. As old as ſhe was, ſhe had all the majeſty of a queen; and I fancy'd, that I could ſee, in her perſon, the woman I had ſeen in the frightful dream I dreamt at Rome, who riſing out of the ground, had ſpoke to me in a language I did not underſtand, but who, ſignor Carlocio told me, was my mother.

No sooner, therefore, had I cast my eyes upon that venerable old woman, and she told me, in the Frank tongue, she wanted to know the occasion of my grief, but I shed such a shower of tears, that it was impossible for me to answer her one word. She bid me rise, (for I was upon my knees, when she received me) and come near her; which having done, she took me by the hand, and told me, I ought not to give up myself thus to despair; that she had distinguished me from all the other slaves, by placing me in her garden; that if I did not like that employ, she desired me to tell her so; and, that she felt she knew not what tender, and, as it were, natural inclination to do me good, her son Ametli having recommended it to her to oblige me, and to make my chains as easy to be as possible.

I thank'd my good mistress for her generous sentiments of me, and assur'd her, I preferred the honour of being in her Service, to that of any of the principal persons in the empire. Mean time, my eyes were still fix'd on her face, and not being able to keep in my tears, at the remembrance of Zebina, who, they told me, was my mother, and to whom that venerable old Turk bore a perfect resemblance, she commanded me to tell her the occasion of my weeping; and press'd me so earnestly

to

to obey her, that I could no longer conceal the cause of my grief——Alas! Madam, says I, after I had taken some spirit, before I declare to you the occasion of my sorrow, tell me, I conjure you, whether ever you had a daughter? and, if she had your air? and, whether your daughter was not taken by the gallies of Maltha, in company with the sultaness Zaide, who was going to visit your prophet's tomb? Ah! Christian! cries Azemire, (for that was my mistress's name) what did you say! and, wherefore com'st thou hither, to renew the pangs, which the space of twenty years has not been able to rid me of! Ah! Poor Zebina! Art thou dead! Speak! Christian! Did she ever embrace your errours! Or forget the duty she ow'd to God, to Mahomet, and to nature! Oh! How many times did I oppose that cursed voyage! Heaven had given me that lovely girl to be the comfort of my old age, and I had enjoy'd the pleasure of her pretty company till she was eighteen! Then, alas! one of my intimate friends, who had the signal favour of pleasing the king of kings, our invincible emperor, upon the death of her consort, would needs go to Mecca, and took my daughter along with her, designing upon her return, to dispose of her to a bassa of her acquaintance.

Every

Every body knows the unhappy fate of that illuſtrious caravan: Her pious intentions were cut off by the taking of the ſhip, and the ſlavery of all the Muſſulmans of her retinue! And this is all I know of that cruel adventure. Orders were immediately iſſu'd for none to ſpeak of it; by reaſon it would detract from the grandeur of the Ottoman Porte, to have it ſaid, that a ſultaneſs and one of the emperor's ſons were become ſlaves to a crew of ſorry pirates, who had but a nook of land to hide their heads in. Thus all perſons were forbid to enquire concerning their friends or relations, loſt in that unhappy diſgrace; and, to this day, I could never find any body to talk with about my poor Zebina!

Alas! Madam, I reply'd, if you are Zebina's mother, nobody is more able to give you an account of her than myſelf! And tho' I never ſaw her in my life, I am ſo concern'd for her, and have been ſo often told how much I was oblig'd to her, that 'tis impoſſible for me ever to forget her. I am the ſon of the illuſtrious Grecian, whom you call your daughter! My birth coſt her her life; and you ought the ſooner to be perſuaded of the truth of what I ſay, in that I always had a real affection for Ametli, her brother! And tho' I am your ſlave, yet upon the ſight of you, I preſently entertain'd

tain'd a respect mixt with I know not what tenderness, which we don't use to have for our mistresses! 'Tis true, I never saw my mother, except in a dream, in which she appeared to me at *Rome*; but her features (which I had time enough to observe) were so exactly like yours, that this likeness was the only cause of my grief and melancholy, and I was wishing for an opportunity of informing myself, by your means, of this truth, when you were pleas'd to prevent me, and send for me into your apartment! The more I look upon you, the more I think you my grandmother; and even to your very language and the sound of your voice, all seems agreeable to the last words my mother said to me, in my dream, which I did not understand. The old gentlewoman, whose nature was already on fire, finding what I told her, to be, in all points agreeable to the truth, bid me come to her, and embracing me very hard, and calling me by a thousand tender names, of which the Greeks are very liberal, she declared, that she had likewise observed in me several of the dear *Zebina*'s features; her mouth, her eyes, her make, and a noble knit, in which she could never be deceived; that, therefore since fortune had thrown me into the land of the faithful, and not only so, but in my own family too, I ought to become

come a Mussulman, in order to enjoy a plentiful fortune, and to be the comfort of her old age; that she had already more tenderness for me, than ever she had had for any of her other children; and, that the good she would do me, if I would but believe her, should exceed my greatest hopes, and manifest the love and good will she had for me.

I immediately rejected a proposal of that nature, and desir'd my mistress to be pleas'd to allow me, at least liberty of conscience, since I had unfortunately lost that of my body: So she press'd me no farther upon that article; and tho' I was not perfectly free, yet my condition received such an agreeable alteration, that I had no other trouble upon me, but that of being separated from the young marchioness of T— my adored mistress. The flowers, which were left to my care, and made a part of my duty, were now a very agreeable diversion to me, who had two slaves under me, to do all the heavy work; so that I was no otherwise than as the master of the garden. Nor did I ever, after that interview, go to lie in the Bagno again; for my good mistress furnished me a chamber in one corner of the garden, where she came daily to visit me, and discourse concerning Zebina. One day, as she was hugely caressing me, I judg'd

judg'd it a fit opportunity to ſpeak to her about my ranſom.——I am your ſlave, ſays I, and am very ſenſible, that all my dependence is on you; and that you may, whenever you pleaſe, render me happy; but tho' fortune has uſed me ſo cruelly, by throwing me into irons, has ſhe not, in ſome degree, made me amends, by giving me my grandmother, even the woman that brought forth the mother that bore me, for my miſtreſs! Alas! Madam, how can you call me yours, and ſee me in irons? In the name of God, in the name of yourſelf and of the dear woman, who was formerly the object of your love, let me be redeem'd, and acquaint my relations at Naples with my misfortunes and your generoſity! My diſcourſe melted my miſtreſs into tears, and being myſelf in the ſame condition, we were both ſilent for ſome time. At laſt, breaking ſilence, and putting on an air of pride and majeſty, ſhe told me; that, for my eaſe, ſhe had not been able to hear me; that ſhe had only ſeen my tears; and that I knew not how to ſpeak: that therefore, ſhe adviſed to get inſtructions; and for that end, would ſend me a Dervis, to teach me what I was obliged to know; and that I ought to hearken to him, and to approve myſelf worthy her blood. As ſhe went out, ſhe gave me a glance mixt with a noble

ſtatelineſs and tender love: I made her a low bow, and found I had acted unwiſely, in declaring myſelf ſo openly as I had done.

However, my fault was irrecoverable, ſince I could no wiſe go from what I had ſaid. I curs'd my ill fortune, that had rendered it impoſſible for me to acquaint thoſe with my condition, who had ſome concern for it. That evening, inſtead of my ſlaves dreſs, they brought me a Turkiſh habit, with a little neat turban. I was troubled, all night long, with frightful dreams, which were too full of whims and extravagancies to be related here. Only one thing made ſuch an impreſſion upon me, that I could never get it out of my head: I dreamt, that I was ſnatch'd from the embraces of a fine young lady, into the arms of a croſs gain'd, crabbed, old woman; that the young one reach'd out her hands to me ſeveral times, to get me back again; and that ſeeing myſelf ſeparated from her by a broad river, I would fain have abandoned my old guide, and returned to my former miſtreſs; that for that purpoſe, ſhe held out to me a large olive-branch, to facilitate my paſſage, but I could not make uſe of that aſſiſtance; and, that uſing all my endeavours to overtake her, and rid myſelf from the old crab's importunities, I wak'd ſo fatigued

and

and tired, that I had not power to get out of my bed.

It was already very late, and the ſlaves who uſed to work with me in the garden, had waited about an hour, when the Dervis came, according to my miſtreſs's promiſe. He asked me after my two companions, who were ſitting at my chamber-door, and fearing, that I was ſick, he knock'd at the door, and commanded me to riſe. I made ſhift to obey him, with much ado, and going to put on my uſual habit to appear decently before the Dervis, I was very much ſurprized to ſee, that they had changed my white robe for a Turkiſh dreſs. I took care not to dreſs myſelf in that garment; by reaſon that alone would have convicted me of apoſtatizing, and I had afterwards been impal'd alive, if I would not profeſs the Mahometan religion: I choſe, therefore, to open the door only in my ſhirt, and get into bed again, and deſire the Dervis to excuſe me, for appearing before him with ſo little reſpect; but that, being ſick, I hop'd he would forgive me that crime. He reply'd, that he heartily forgave me, and was ſorry for my illneſs; that, however, he was come to adminiſter remedies both for body and ſoul; and, that if I would hearken to him, and follow his advice, I

ſhould, e'er long, be one of the happieſt men upon earth.

The all-good, all-great, all-merciful Lord, ſays he, has ſhewn mercy to his poor ſlave and vouchſafed to take him out of the furnace of tribulations and ſufferings, to bring him into the land of the believers. I am come hither to inſtruct him in the truth of his law, which was formerly revealed to our great prophet, which has been tranſmitted and confirmed to us by miracles without number, and which promiſes to all ſuch as ſhall obſerve it faithfully, infinite pleaſures, in the abundance of delicious wines that we ſhall drink in the other life, in the beauty and love of women, in a perpetual youth, and an unchangeable vigour! happy, thrice happy are thoſe, who are born in the boſom of the moſque! who are influenced by the truths of the Alcoran! and who have never imbib'd the ridiculous ſuperſtitions of the Jews, the fooliſh Imaginations of the Gentiles, nor the whimſies and extravagancies of the Chriſtians; open your eyes to the light, Luzaſem, for the Dervis, who knew not my own, gave me that name, which ſignifies, conducted to the truth, open your eyes and your ears, and be not a rebel to the voice of the blood, which ſpeaks to you from God, and from our great prophet Mahomet.

If

If at the time that this ridiculous Dervis entertained me with ſuch a gallimawfry, I durſt have laugh'd out, I ſhould have done it very heartily; and indeed, it had been impoſſible for me to forbear, but that I called to mind all the calamities that had ever be allen me, and the diſmal circumſtances of my preſent condition. I knew, by my converſation with the people of Europe, and others, how dangerous it was, for a ſlave to receive the propoſitions of a Turk, without reſpect and attention; and therefore, having dreſs'd myſelf, I made a low bow to my Mahometan divine, and aſſured him, that I had a great reſpect for his perſon, and for thoſe that ſent him to diſcourſe with me; but that I was ſo unfit, in my preſent circumſtances, to hearken to any thing that concerned religion, that I knew not what anſwer to make him; that, indeed, I lov'd to know the truth, but that an entire liberty of body and mind was altogether neceſſary to drive away the ſuſpicion, either of fear or intereſt. So, contenting myſelf with the Theſes of divinity already imprinted in my mind, I told the Turk, that it was a ſhame to their ſect, to preſs poor ſlaves to change their religion; that the trouble they gave themſelves upon that ſcore, rendered 'em contemptible in the ſight of all good men; that a change of heart

heart can't come but from the presumption of the mind; and that the mind can't be enlightned, but by a light from above; that when a slave, from a Christian became a Mahometan, it was either owing to his fear of slavery, and the hardships it ties him down to, or because he desired such pleasures and enjoyments, as he could not hope for in his deplorable condition; that therefore, as those two motives were not noble enough to persuade a reasonable man, a change that proceeded from such causes was so far from deserving rewards, that it was even criminal; that I must be first convinced, that Mahomet was sent from God to give his laws to mankind, and that the christian religion was not more holy, and more conformable to right reason, than all the other religions together; that if he himself would but hearken to me in his turn, I would prove to him, in few words, that he was more a slave than I, tho' in the midst of the seeming liberty he enjoy'd; and that as for me, notwithstanding my heavy load of irons, I thought myself much happier, and enjoy'd more tranquillity, than the Turks, who fancied themselves the happiest people upon earth.

The Dervis, who had listen'd to me with an admirable patience, assured me, that he expected such an answer as I had returned him;

him: but that he was not baulk'd at that: besides, added he, I promise myself success from the Mahometan blood that runs in your veins; which blood will work its effect, in God's time, and that of our great prophet: I leave you, with hopes of seeing you again, very speedily: May the dew of heaven whiten your soul, sullied with strange opinions, as it whitens the gawse and linnen designed for the Turbans which cover the heads of the wisest emperors in the world; adieu, Luzasém! I hope you'l return to me.

I tarried alone, after that visit, till one of the clock in the afternoon. Then one of the slaves, that worked with me in the garden, brought me a dish, wherein there was some flesh, and a quarter of a boil'd fowl, with a little bread, a pot of coffee, and some dry sweetmeats. This service which was presented me with a great deal of respect, very much surprized me; for till then I used to find a great loaf, some pulse, with salt-fish, or boil'd beef, which was laid in my window at the hours of Vespers; and in the evening I had nothing but bread and a bit of sorry cheese made of goats-milk. I was afraid, they had a mind to make me believe, that I was, ipso facto, a Turk, and that, at last, I had consented to all they had asked of me. With this thought, I

got

got up, and wrapping my blanket about me, told the ſlave, he was miſtaken; that I had already eaten the beans which were laid in my window; and, that, therefore, he might take the pains to carry back that meſs to the perſons, who commanded him to bring it to me.

The ſlave did as I bid him; and about four of the clock, my grandmother came into my chamber, and, calling me by the name the Dervis had given me, told me I was unwiſe, and that ſhe would make me a Muſſulman, whether I would or no. As it was late, and I was, before, extremely fallen away, thro' grief, and the abſtinence I had lived in for ſeveral days, I was ſeiz'd with a weakneſs, which took away my ſenſes. This ſo alarmed my miſtreſs, that ſhe called for help. Hereupon, her daughter-in-law, whoſe jealouſy had drawn her into the garden, came running with her two ſlaves, and were amazed to ſee their old miſtreſs leaning over my face, and ſhedding tears like one in deſpair. Without ſtaying to make unprofitable reflexions, they endeavoured, by all methods, to yield relief to my ſad condition; applying, for that end, the moſt precious eſſences; for the true Muſſulmans have no wine in their houſes. At laſt, after two hours pain and torment, I opened my eyes, and was ſurpriz'd

to

to ſee myſelf encompaſs'd with four women, all in tears, and three or four men running about, to get me up again. Being come to myſelf, and perceiving my old mother in tears, ſqueezing one of my hands in hers, ſays I to her, with a low voice, this is not the way to cure me; my illneſs proceeds altogether from grief; you'll have nothing of me, but my poor bones, if you continue to do as you do; give me my ſlaves dreſs again, and don't conſtrain me to hate you: Ah, wretch, replied the old woman, doſt thou affront her thou ought'ſt to honour, and canſt thou conceive a deſign of hating me, when I am come to make thee the happieſt man in the world: Doſt think we uſe every body as thou art uſed here? And if I was not greatly concerned for thee I ſhould not much trouble myſelf, whether thou waſt free or not; but I will have it ſo. What haſt thou, then, to ſay againſt our law, that makes thee deſpiſe it with ſo much ſcorn? Or, what findeſt thou ſo great and comfortable in thine, that thou ſhould'ſt prefer chains to liberty, for its ſake? Thou doſt not yet know all thy miſfortunes, nor all my goodneſs! Ungrateful man, as thou art! Perhaps, when thou ſhalt underſtand that I hindered thee from being impal'd alive, [thou wilt] entertain the ſentiments thou oughteſt of obliging me [illegible] Th

 wor

word impal'd chill'd all the blood in my body; but as I was not conscious of any crime that deserved such a punishment, I told her, they might invent what torments they pleased to take away my life, but that I hoped in God, who would not suffer me to be exposed to so exquisite a torment; and that death, of whose approach I was sensible, would soon deliver me out of their clutches.

At that instant, my fever grew twice as violent as before; and I had all the symptoms of an approaching death; but my grandmother loved me too well to consent to the loss of me. However, as she would not seem to flag in her zeal for her religion, she judg'd it convenient to dismiss her women, and left me only the Messineze slave, who being my countrywoman, and speaking my language, might be more agreeable to me than any other person. At that moment, I had so great an indifference for life, that I did not regard whom they had left to look after me. Some time having pass'd with a profound silence, Mariola, the Messineze slave, thus bespoke me: Signor Napolitano, pensate a vivere; la morte non e perchi non possessere beato; curate puro, la liberta seguitera la sua salute: Signor Neapolitan, think of living; death is not for one that cannot be happy; think, therefore of

of your recovery, which will be follow'd by your liberty.——These words spoken to me in Italian, rowz'd me from my profound Reverie; and casting my eyes on the person that had uttered 'em, I was extremely surprized to hear a young woman of two and twenty, handsome, and with the sweetest air in the world, say, in her own language,——I thank kind heaven, for placing me in this station, during my horrid slavery; all that ever I serv'd before, since I came into this place, vex'd me, and drew tears from me; but this of serving one of my own countrymen, and assisting him in his infirmity, is so agreeable to me, that I fancy I am no longer a slave, as often as I consider, I can speak to my countrymen, and relieve a christian in misery! Ah! Madam! says I, why d'ye counsel me to live? Rather suffer me to die, and hasten the end of my unhappy days, that I may be delivered from the dreadful torment prepared for me! O God! Who would have believed, when I was at home, among my own relations, that ever I should have met with so sad a disaster! and only because I can't embrace their ridiculous superstitions, be condemn'd to the most horrid death that cruelty can invent!——What torment, and what death is this you are talking of? says the charming slave to me: Are you mad, Signor Fran-

cisco, (for 'tis the custom of our country, to ask each other's name, the first time they converse; and that I had told her was my name, they make it their study to do you good! 'Tis true, they would fain have you change your religion; but they'll allow you so much time to resolve upon't, and get instruction, that, ten to one, the face of things will be changed, before you have occasion to change your religion. Slight not therefore my advice, but bestow some consideration thereupon. Gabrielle and I live, and so we are like, with one of the loveliest and best-natured mistresses in the world. She diverts us night and day, with the pleasant account of their prophet's miracles, and the mildness of their Law: At first, we hated to hear such trumpery; but soon found, that that way of dealing with her occasioned frequent affronts to be offered to us, and even some blows from a rascally eunuch, who made it his business to plague us. Now, 'tis otherwise with us, who are slaves after our mistress's own heart: We live more happily, because we are more tractable: We give her the hearing of all her ridiculous fables; and not only so, but sometimes put her upon relating them; always flattering her with our surrender, as soon as we are convinced. In expectation hereof. I assure you, she perfectly adores us.

us. I keep the keys of the jewels, and Gabrielle is ſo great a favourite, that, ſhe other day, to divert us, and let us revenge ourſelves upon the ſawcy eunuch, ſhe was pleas'd to make him hold his great noſe, while we gave him two hundred fillips upon it. We made him almoſt all over bloody, and the horrid faces the fellow made every blow we ſtruck him, made very good paſtime; and I can't forbear laughing at the remembrance of it.

Be eaſy, therefore, and ſeem a little coming in this matter. The Dervis whom you affronted, would have complained to the Sangiac, (or governor) and ſo, I muſt needs ſay, you might have been impal'd alive, if it had not been for your grandmother. For 'tis an unpardonable crime in this country, to ſpeak any otherwiſe of the religion thereof, than in the moſt reſpectful and ſubmiſſive terms. My miſtreſs often diſcourſes me concerning you, and extremely commends your fine ſhape. She tells us, that whichſoever of us two ſhall gain you over ſooneſt, ſhall have the honour of being your ſpouſe. The whole ſtory of your birth, as your grandmother gave it to her, has been told us again; and not a day paſſes, but we have a long chat about you. I did not know what anſwer to return to this diſcourſe of Mariola; for I was aware of a

certain

certain myſtery there was between thoſe women, which I was never able to dive into. But I was ſo deſirous to be let into the ſecret, that I could not forbear telling her, how glad I ſhould be to know what paſs'd in their converſation. I had no occaſion to make long prayers, Mariola telling me, I had made a conqueſt, before I was aware on't; and ſuch a one too, as would have coſt me my life, had not I been preſerved by a kind of miracle.

It was now autumn, at which ſeaſon they were wont to ſpend ſome time in the country, but not at the vintage, for, as I ſaid before, the Turks drink no wine. Inſtead of that, they dry abundance of figs, raiſins, and ſeveral other fruits, which they preſerve as well for their proviſion, as for their traffick to the weſt, which is very conſiderable. The women are not half ſo retired in the country as in town; but go a walking, and fiſhing, and divert themſelves with playing any waggiſh tricks with their ſlaves who are allow'd, for that time, to ſee and talk with their miſtreſſes. I was not yet perfectly recovered of a malignant fever, that had brought me very low, and procur'd me the liberty of living at diſcretion. Nor was any body ſuffered to ſpeak to me during my illneſs, but Mariola, [who asked me, whether I would not be quite well, when the

the time was come, for us to go into the country? And whether I ſhould not be glad to take the air, and divert myſelf there? I reply'd, that I found myſelf ſo weak, that I could not take one ſtep; and that my diſtemper, which had laſted but four and twenty hours, had more jaded me, than any other could have done, tho' of ſix months ſtanding; that, beſides, I had no cloaths to go out in, ſince they had taken away my mantle; and, that I was reſolved never to take the turban, tho' they could put me to a thouſand deaths.—— I have, nevertheleſs, undertaken to prevail with you to wear it, ſays the beautiful Meſſineze; and you ought not to make yourſelf uneaſy as to that point, if you are allow'd the liberty of living in your religion; for, according to the Sicilian proverb, 'tis not the habit that makes the monk: But you will not be required to make any promiſe, that may burden your conſcience. On the other hand, people in ſlavery ought to take hold of all opportunities that preſent themſelves, to render their bondage as light as they can; and, how do you know, what ſuch a feint may bring forth? This, at leaſt, is moſt certain; that if you have a mind to ſet yourſelf at liberty, and to do the ſame good office for Gabrielle and me, the matter would be very feaſible; for our miſtreſſes,

who

who love you as their own child, will give you marks of their tenderness, as soon as they can handsomely do it; and especially my young mistress, who has entertained a violent passion in your favour. —— But, Mariola, says I, she is my aunt; my mother was her husband's sister. And what then? answer'd she; love never makes such nice distinctions; and the fair Zaide never sees you, without an extraordinary Emotion. 'Twas she, that in Gabrielle's cloaths, took from you, one evening, the box wherein you kept the picture which her jealousy gave her a glymse of; and it was the same Zaide that gave you the string of beads. She made us the confidents of her robbery, and having shew'd it us, we informed her, that she had not taken the most precious jewel of all; for that box was a case to the picture of some person, who was the occasion of all your grief. There's no country nor nation void of curiosity; and the Turkish women have a greater share of it, than those of Europe: If, therefore, you go into the country, as, without you will, prepare to let Zaide see the picture you concealed from her. This is an order which she enjoined me to acquaint you with; and I need not tell you, she is a gentlewoman of that pride and imperiousness, that she will run into the greatest extremities, if you, in the least,

leaſt, thwart her deſire. I deſired Mariola to leave me alone, to conſider of the meaſures, I ought to take; which ſhe had no ſooner done, but I wrack'd my imagination, and had a thouſand different thoughts to prevent my reſolution. I reaſon'd both as a Chriſtian, and as an honeſt man, and turned my conſcience all manner of ways, without being able to give it the leaſt ſatisfaction. I could neither reſolve to pretend myſelf a Turk, nor to anſwer a love ſo criminal, as to be even contrary to the reſpect nature herſelf inſpires us with. At laſt, the time of our going into the country approaching, and perceiving that I ſhould be oblig'd to do all that Mariola had talked with me about. I prevailed with a ſlave to buy me a few fine colours, and having prepared a piece of vellum, exactly the ſame ſize as the marchioneſs's picture, I drew ſuch a woman myſelf, as my fancy furniſh'd me withal, and as beautiful as poſſibly I could; for I had learnt to paint, while I was at *Rome*, and had taken ſome delight in miniature, while I liv'd at the marchioneſs's at Naples.

This ſerv'd my turn very well, for when we were juſt ready to ſet out, my old miſtreſs, who had careſſed me a thouſand times, for the hopes Mariola gave her of my compliance, came herſelf, and told me, that we

ſhould enter upon our journey the next day, and that I ſhould not be far from her litter. I returned the honour ſhe ſhew'd me as well as I could, humbly thanking her for her kindneſs to me, and deſiring her to be pleas'd not to require any thing of me that was contrary to the liberty of my ſoul, and and that ſhe would give me time to conſider of obeying her; and added, that if I wore the habit ſhe had provided for me, it was only to cover me, that I might not appear in an indecent manner. She would needs ſee me dreſs myſelf and cut my hair, herſelf, with her own cizars. In a word, I had no ſooner got the turban upon my head, and my ſimitar by my ſide, but my old grandmother was tranſported out of her ſenſes. She call'd me her lion, her thunder, and all the ſtrength of her race; and, in ſhort, gave me ſo many hugs, and pretty names, that I was quite aſham'd of her weakneſs.

The next morning, at break of day, they brought me ſome ſweetmeats and coffee, and I found a horſe at my chamber-door, ready bridled and ſadled. I fixed the ſtirrops, as we wear them in Europe; for the Turks uſe them quite another way, and ſeem rather to kneel than ſit upon a Horſe. I mounted very nimbly, and keeping by my miſtreſſes litters ſide, I diſcours'd with 'em concerning the beauty of their country, which

which pleas'd 'em extremely. Being come near the vineyard, where we were to alight, a bull that had eſcaped the hunters, after being wounded in the woods, came directly down to our litter; which as ſoon as my miſtreſſes perceived, and judged themſelves in the utmoſt danger, I drew my ſimitar, and went to fight the wild beaſt: But as I had very little experience, and was not ſo far recovered, as to be able to defend my ſelf, the bull diſmounting me, thruſt his horn into my horſe's guts, trampled upon me, and left me almoſt dead, and quite out of my ſenſes. The women made a ſhift to reach the houſe, and ſent ſeveral ſlaves to defend me from the fury of that roaring beaſt; but he had left me before they came, and they returned with me upon a litter, thinking I was quite dead. It was upon this occaſion, that one of the cruel'ſt adventures befel me, that ever I met with. My grandmother abandoned herſelf to deſpair, and my young miſtreſs committed ſuch extravagancies, as amazed me, when I afterwards heard of 'em. Having ſtript me ſtark naked, and got a ſurgeon to ſearch me, they found I had no ſymptoms of life, and gave me over: However, as they could not content themſelves, that a man of their blood ſhould die uncircumcis'd, they reſolved to make me undergo that cruel operation, be-

lieving I was not then able to oppose them. For this end, they sent for the Dervis, who had catechiz'd me, and who lived but half a mile from the place where we were. Being come, he comforted my mistresses; and after he had said his prayers, came towards me, and purified me, by throwing two or three pails of water upon my body: but nothing could make me stir. At last, after several repeated cries, he ask'd me, whether I would not believe in God, adore him, and live in the Law that he had given to men by his great prophet Mahomet? My mistresses answering for me, I will, the cursed Dervis had certainly cut off my foreskin, had not the pain the knife put me in rowz'd me out of my swoon. 'Tis impossible to express the rage I was in, when I saw myself in that condition. The operation was but half performed; but I lost a great deal of blood, and knew not how to stop it. My old mistress would fain have persuaded me, to let the Dervis go through stitch with his work; but the look I gave her without speaking a word, turn'd her as pale as envy itself.

She went from me, and sent a slave to desire me, at least, to make use of astringent powders, in order to put a stop to the great flux of blood. On the other hand, I was uncapable of advice, and would fain have died.

died. At laſt, the heat of my paſſion being over, I found my ſtrength decay, and leſt, falling into my former weakneſs, they ſhould renew their attempt to circumciſe me, I bid the ſlave go and fetch a ſurgeon, and bid 'em take care not to let the wretched Dervis come near me again, for that I would certainly murder him, tho' I ſhould be impal'd alive the next morning; and that if it were not for ſome Conſiderations, I'd murder all the perſons that had a hand in this barbarous wickedneſs.

In a few days after this, Mariola told me, I muſt prepare for a rencounter one of thoſe nights, for the picture that was in the box lately taken from me; for which her cloaths were already beſpoke. I thank'd her for giving me notice of it, and prepar'd to play my part as well as I could. I had not ſeen my miſtreſſes all the time of their mourning; but Mariola came to me every day, to inform me of the ſtate of their health; and to give me a thouſand declarations of both their affections to me.

The evening Mariola had forewarn'd me of being, at laſt, come, about three in the morning, the young widow enter'd my chamber, diſguis'd in her ſlave's habit, I did not ſee her, by reaſon ſhe carried a dark lanthorn; ſo coming to my bed-ſide, and believing I was aſleep, ſhe call'd me ſeveral times,

times, before I would make her any answer. With that she opened her lanthorn, and view'd me earnestly a good while, she set it upon the floor, and fixing her charming eyes upon my face, awake, Luzasem! Luzasem, awake! says she. I could no longer withstand her embraces; but pretending to take her for Mariola, begun to call her by her name, and to assure her, that I did not at all approve of her conduct; that indeed I was glad to see her in the day-time, were it only to inform myself of my mistresses health; but that I could never forgive her for coming in the night, to expose me to the ill usage the discovery of such a visit would occasion me; concluding that if ever she came again, I'd acquaint my mistress with it. To this she answered not a syllable, only squeez'd me between her arms; but I carried myself with an entire coldness and insensibility, still pretending I took her for a slave. At last, addressing herself to me, in the Turkish language, which I then understood perfectly well — thou may'st be happy, if thou wilt, Luzasem! says she; and fortune has now thrown thee the fairest opportunity to make thy self so, as ever thou could'st wish! Ah! Madam! answered I, knowing her by her voice, is it you! To what danger do you expose your self, by coming hither alone

alone at this time of night! if your eunuch ſo much as ſuſpect you, we are both ruin'd! Oh, never fear, ſays ſhe, every body's a-bed and aſleep, and none awake but my ſelf! Myſelf, miſerable woman! wak'd with love! love! that allows me no enjoyment, but when I ſee thee! Such is thy art of pleaſing, Chriſtian! and thou feel'ſt not a tenth part of the pain thou makeſt others endure! Before ever I heard, that thou waſt of my husband's blood, I conceived the tenderneſs I now declare to thee! 'Twas I that ſo imperiouſly demanded the jewels of thee, thinking to have found there the picture of ſome rival! if Mariola, whom I have made the confident of my paſſion, had been ſo kind to me, as to let thee know, how much I was troubled, when I found I had not what I wanted in that box, ſhe might have told thee, that I ſtood like a ſtone for two hours together; and that, at laſt, I form'd the deſign of getting that picture at any rate. Thou waſt then known, 'tis true; but of all the accidents that befel thee, (of which we were not inſenſible ourſelves) none of 'em afforded me an opportunity of putting my enterprize in execution. At preſent, that a favourable occaſion offers. I beg of thee, deny me not the favour, to aſſure me, thou loveſt nothing in the world! No, ſays I; I love nothing at all, and to this

this day I have been insensible to all the beauties of the earth! 'Tis true, when I was yet a child, a young princess at Rome presented me with her picture, which I kept ever since for her sake! but that princess has now been dead these ten years; and making some reflexions, in this my slavish condition, upon all the accidents of my life, I could recover no idea of that lady's face, without looking on the picture; and this putting me in mind of the change of my fortune, I could not refrain tears at the remembrance of my lost liberty.

Hast not thou, then given thy heart to any fair; and can'st thou assure me, without lying, that no lady possesses it? —— No, answered I; I have yet felt nothing of what you call love; and indeed, I fancy I am not capable of any other love, except that of my liberty. Thou art charm'd with that, then, art thou? reply'd my mistress; and would not a lady that should bring thee abundance of wealth, and by that means procure thee that liberty, deserve any thing of thee? —— Alas, madam, says I, what lady would think of a man in my condition, I'll never do any thing contrary to my conscience; and I'm aware, that I can think of no settlement in this country, without violating the faith I have promis'd to God.— Never trouble thy head about that, reply'd she,

ſhe; i'll make thee eaſy as to all thy ſcruples; but before I tell thee all I deſign to do, give me that princeſs's picture, and thereby convince me, that thou loveſt nothing but liberty, as thou ſaid'ſt. Thereupon, I gave her the picture I had drawn at Patras, before I went into the country; and my miſtreſs returned to her apartment, leſt the day approaching, ſhe might, poſſibly, be diſcovered. Taking her leave of me, ſhe told me, that when we ſhould arrive at Patras, we ſhould have ſome private converſation in her apartment, and deſired me, in the mean while, to make the Selan, or noſegay of flowers, that we might underſtand, and communicate our thoughts to each other, ſuch days as we could not get an opportunity of talking together! I promiſed to follow her advice; and ſhe preſented me with a heart of gold, enameled, and ſet round with rich diamonds, with a large ruby in the middle; ſhe gave me likewiſe a bracelet of her hair, and ty'd it her ſelf about my left arm. Then leaving me, I ſaw her no more, till four days afterwards, till we arrived in town.

The next day after our arrival, all the perſons of diſtinction that were there, came to welcome the two ladies home; for they were perſons of as good repute as any in the country, and my miſtreſs's brother, who

was a favourite of Couproli's, and had a considerable post at the first minister's of the empire, added much to the reputation of the house of Museullem. Not long after, I had the honour to be presented to the Sangiac, as a relation of that illustrious family. As I spoke the Turkish language perfectly well, it was no difficult matter for me to pass for one of their nation too. My grandmother had desired me to take upon me that character; and I acquitted myself perfectly well, being honoured, at taking my leave of the governor, with divers presents, and other marks of his esteem. All this while, I desired nothing more, than to return to Naples. I had been now near two years a slave, if the manner I lived in might be called a slavery, and could by no means, be reconciled to the habit of an infidel; and tho' I was known by nobody but the Italians who were taken with me, yet I could not appear even before them without confusion. One day, as I was walking alone without the city, I happened to meet the captain of the vessel on board of which I had embarked for the isle of Maltha, and who was taken into slavery with me. He did not at all know me in the habit I was in, and he was so much altered, that I should scarce have known him, had not I took an opportunity to speak to him. He was

coming

coming from a garden juſt without the city, and had a basket full of orange flowers upon his head; ſo flinging him a handful of Medins, I deſired him to give me a few ſprigs. He anſwered, in Italian, that he wiſhed he ware maſter of the flowers, that he might preſent me with them all; but deſired me to content myſelf with what he cou'd then ſpare me. By the tone of his voice and language, I preſently knew him again, and taking the basket from his head, I embraced him, and call'd him by his name. The poor man then knew me, notwithſtanding my diſguiſe, and flinging himſelf from me, as if he had ſpoke to the devil, go, be gone, wretched villain, ſays he; what? have you deny'd your faith for a little pelf! Better, ten thouſand times, you had died, than have given ſuch a ſcandal to your religion.

Thereupon, that ignorant and unpolite fellow made me a more ſenſible diſcourſe, than ever I heard in my life. For anſwer, I aſſur'd him, that I was as good a chriſtian as himſelf; that he ſuffered himſelf to be led away to cenſure a man only for an outſide; that he did not know half the myſtery of my dreſs; and that if he would but give me a meeting in a place where I might talk freely with him, I'd ſurprize him with the relation of my preſent circumſtances,

and we would ſet our heads together, and contrive our eſcape. The captain was a man of a quick apprehenſion, and was, beſides, a very bold and skilful ſailor; I no ſooner inſpired him with the thoughts of liberty, but he liſten'd to my propoſal, rely'd on my promiſes, and appointed to meet me, at ſuch a time, without the gate of Athens, through which he went every day, to go to his maſter's garden. About the ſame hour the next day, I met him again, coming from the ſame place; where I acquainted him with the ſtate of affairs between me and Azemire, and repreſented to him, how eaſily I could carry off abundance of gold and jewels, if he thought fit to undertake our eſcape. Upon this, the captain begun to kiſs my hands, and aſſured me, that he was ſo far from being afraid on't, that he would run any riſque to recover his liberty, and ſee his poor family again, of whom he had heard no news ever ſince we were taken, which was two years: For this purpoſe, added he, you muſt ſtill pretend to be a good Turk; and ſince you are already taken for ſuch, you muſt confirm your relations in that belief, and do nothing that may ſeem to reflect upon their religion: Nay, you muſt not ſtick to go even to their moſque; and if they ſpeak of ſettling you among 'em, comply with 'em in

e very

every thing, and give 'em no cauſe to miſtruſt you: when you have done this, you muſt ask leave to go to court, or to traffick by ſea, and by this ſcheme we will lay our deſign, for the ſucceſs whereof I'll be anſwerable.

Thereupon, I ask'd ſignor Antonio (for that was the captain's name) how I might come to the ſpeech of him, when I ſhould be ready? He anſwered, that I had nothing to do, but go to the Bagno, in the evening, when the ſlaves went to their reſt; that as ſoon as I ſaw him, I ſhould give him a wink, which ſhould be as a ſignal for him, to get himſelf ready; and that the ſecond time I made that ſignal, he'd ſet out the next morning, inſtead of going to work. Having thus concerted our meaſures, my head run altogether upon the putting my deſign in execution; I was never out of humour, and the hopes I had of returning to my dear country, in a ſhort time, gave me a healthful and pleaſant look, and made me chearful in all my actions: This ſo charm'd my miſtreſſes, that I got what I would of 'em, and it was no more than ask and have. The Dervis came to the houſe every day, and being reſolved to go thro' with the work he had begun upon me, was buzzing me continually upon the chapter of the Mahometan religion. I pretended to be much

much more tractable and coming than formerly, and assured him, I had nothing to object against, if he would only leave me in the condition I was in, and content himself with the operation he had begun, without going thro' with it. He told me, he must, however, go to the Mosque, and make rejoicings and give thanks for my conversion. I desired him not to make it so publick, since it was already sufficiently believed in the city, and alledged, it would expose my grandmother to the displeasure of the Sangiac, who took me for a Turk by birth, and a good Mussulman, and in a word, I insinuated my self so far into his favour, that he took me, in all respects to be as zealous a Mussulman of the law, as any at all.

'Tis not usual in Turkey, for the men and women to sit at table together; but yet I always did with my grandmother, and being young, she was always caressing me, and could not let a day pass, without giving me marks of her affection: nay, such a power had I got over her, that I could easily dive into all the secrets of the family; and nothing was now done, but by my particular direction. I bought, I sold, I changed slaves, and recovered 'em from others; I was entire master of the house, and all the affairs thereof were left to my care. Zaide

too

too would ſcarce miſs a day, but come and range the flower-pots in my garden; and, by that myſterious menage, let me know the favourable ſentiments ſhe had entertained in my behalf; to which ſhe conſtantly found returns in the noſegays I preſented her withal. And this manner of entertaining each other with the ſecrets of our amour continued for ſome months; during which time I had held ſeveral conferences with captain Antonio, concerning our flight. I had a great mind to buy him for a ſlave, but durſt not ask Azemire ſo to do, for fear of being ſuſpected: Wherefore I made it my buſineſs to ſtrike an acquaintance with his maſter, who was a young brisk Turk, named Joſuf, and who, ſince the death of Aſen, which made Zaide a widow, had entertained a paſſion for that beauty, but did not know which way to diſcloſe it to her. This made him proud of my acquaintance; and my relation to the family being no manner of ſecret, he would ſpeak of his affection to me, as to a kinſman of the adored Zaide; and on the other hand, I promiſed him faithfully to ſpeak a good word for him, and do all that lay in my power, to render him happy. Tho' I was ſenſible, Zaide loved me, and that her ſlaves had not only told me ſo, but frequently aſſured me, that ſhe deſired nothing more than to

join

join her fate with mine, yet I so dreaded the thoughts of marrying my aunt, and, by that incestuous act, to confirm the world in their opinion of my apostacy, that I resolved to hasten my departure; and, for that purpose, declared my resolution to Mariola, with whom I held so good a correspondence, that I cou'd trust her with any thing. She told me, I should not find the execution of my design so easy as I imagin'd, and that it would even be a difficult matter for me to leave Patras, because of the secret orders Azemire had every where given, for the keeping a watchful eye on my behaviour.

No, you are mightily deceived, says that lovely Messineze slave; and your measures will prove ineffectual in this country: You think, 'tis with these people, just as 'tis among the christians, which is a gross mistake; 'tis true, one Turk never mistrusts another Turk; but a Christian is always suspected of want of faith: I have heard Azemire say, that if ever you were capable of running away from her, and she could by any means, catch you again, she'd put you out of a condition to go off with your life. 'Tis impossible to tell you, how that old woman loves you; for she has charged me to get you to marry her daughter-in-law. I think, you are always charged with ungrateful

grateful commiſſions, ſays I to her; what, would you have me marry my uncle's wife? Nay, 'tis nothing to me, anſwered Mariola; but that is the touch-ſtone, by which they deſign to try, whether you are a good Muſſulman, and are willing to tarry here with your family; for Ametli's return hither is never expected, he being juſt made c ptain of the Turkiſh ſhips, by his uncle's intereſt, who has married him to one of his daughters, with a vaſt fortune: This news came but yeſterday, in a letter to his mother; and Zaide was preſent, when Azemire charged me to propoſe to you to marry her daughter in-law, and, by that means, make yourſelf heir of all ſhe has. I know, your thoughts are altogether intent upon your return to Naples; and, believe me, there's no method you can take ſo likely to facilitate that deſign, as that of marrying Zaide. In a word, Mariola gave me a thouſand other reaſons to induce me to accept a propoſal that ſeem'd ſo likely to open a way to my liberty: To which I pretended to yield, with deſign only to improve my deceit; and impower her to give my promiſe, adding, that the perſon ſhe propoſed, was not indifferent to me; ſo loth was I to let Mariola herſelf into the real ſentiments of my mind.

The ſame evening that Mariola had thus entertained me, Azemire ſent for me in o her apartment, and having told me her deſign as to my marriage, ſhe ſent alſo for Zaide, who being come, Azemire bid her look upon me, for the future, as her ſpouſe, and that I ſhould be made ſuch the firſt day of the next moon. I anſwered all her favours, in a manner that extorted greater from Azemire. I ſeem'd really to enjoy my happineſs, and poſſeſs'd, with Zaide, a fortune envy'd by the greateſt lords of Patras. The marriage was celebrated without any ſplendor, by reaſon the Turks are not wont to make entertainments upon thoſe occaſions; for a man might ruin himſelf, if he was to do it for all their wives he takes. All he has to do is, to promiſe, before the parents of the woman, that he'll take care of her and her children; and that he'll never let her want the neceſſaries of life. Then the parents ſending her home to his houſe, and deſiring the husband to give her good uſage, ſhe promiſes, on her ſide, all her love, and an inviolable fidelity to her ſpouſe, ſubmitting herſelf, for that purpoſe, to ſerve him, and to expoſe her life to pleaſe him. This article is very ſtrictly obſerved; for 'tis very hard for a married woman in Turkey to have a gallant, or be a coquet, their life is ſo retired.

Joſuf

Josuf no sooner heard of my marriage, but he supposed I had bantered him, in promising to speak a good word for him to Zaide; and resolved to be revenged upon me, at any rate. But not being able to meet me any where, to demand satisfaction he made use of captain Antonio, his slave to bring me a challenge to meet him.

I was never so surprized in my life, as when I was told, one morning, as I was rising, that one of Josuf's slaves wanted to speak with me on the part of his master. Soon after, Signor Antonio came to me, and, with an air of sadness, lord! what have you done: says he, lifting up his eyes, and what has induced you thus to knock our design o'th' head! My master has sent me to tell you, that he is your enemy, and that he will neither eat nor drink, till you have given him satisfaction for the affront you have put upon him, in marrying Zaide, whom you had promised him for a wife: He alledges, continued Antonio, that you have betray'd him, and desires to see you, sabre in hand, in a garden near the gate of Athens: There's his note, whereby you'll see the hour of meeting. This proceeding of Josuf, I say, very much surprized me; for I was not used to handle a sabre, and always endeavoured to avoid falling out with Turks, upon that very account. I de-

ſired Signor Antonio to tarry a little, and went into my chamber to draw up an anſwer. Mariola being there when I wrote, read my note, unſeen by me, and went and told her miſtreſs the ſubſtance of it. Immediately Zaide came and forced me to give her the note, whereby ſhe was informed of a quarrel between me and Joſuf, and the hour and place of our rendezvous. As it ſet her all on fire, ſhe ran after the ſlave Antonio who gave us an account of the ambuſcades which my adverſary deſigned to prepare for me. He has commanded me, ſays he, to come behind you, and diſarm you, while you are fighting; afterwards, we are to tye you to a tree, where my maſter deſigns to glut himſelf with revengeful cruelty, by dividing you piecemeal. But, in ſhort, continued he, you know, the Turks never forgive an injury, and therefore, if you don't, by ſome means or other, rid yourſelf of him, you'll be continually plagu'd with affronting meſſages. At leaſt, 'tis abſolutely my opinion that you muſt kill him; and accordingly, do aſſure you, that I'll cut off his head, while you are fighting. The ſhame of ſuch a barbarous aſſaſſination, and the fear of being always in danger of my life, except Joſuf loſt his, rendered me mute, and irreſolute for ſome time; but, at laſt, I bid Antonio

tonio tell his master, that I'd meet him at the place appointed, that evening, at seven of the clock, by moon light, and bring no person with me; and desired him to be there at the same time, without Company also.

I was very uneasy all the rest of the day. Zaide still fearing for my life, was all in tears, and would fain have acquainted Azemire with my design. I desired her to do nothing that might make me change my resolution; al edging, that it were to lose my affection, and that she might consider, whether of us two she had most esteem for. Nevertheless, she reiterated her prayers and intreaties, and desired Mariola, who had always been successful in bringing me over to her party, to dissuade me from so dangerous a design. Mariola was, indeed, so witty, that I had a sincere regard to what she said, were it only upon that account. I owe my liberty to that young slave, and it was by her advice, that I happily succeeded in that bold enterprize. She demanded to know the grounds of our quarrel, and the place of our rendezvous; and the long abode she made in Turkey having thorowly acquainted her with the manners and genius of the inhabitants, she declared to me, that the resolution I had taken to fight, was the safest method for me; that I must kill

my

my adversary, let what would come of it; if I had a mind to save my own life; that greatness of soul was very unseasonable among Barbarians, who are utter strangers to good manners and sincerity; that I ought principally, instead of standing upon punctilios of valour and bravery, to arm my self with cunning and treachery, to deal with my enemy; that since we had agreed to fight in the night, it concern'd me to take the advantage thereof, and especially, not to neglect fire-arms, with which they fight at a distance, when the match is not equal: In a word, says she, I'll see, with my own eyes, all that passes; for which purpose, I'll put on mans cloaths, and follow you at a distance, in order to be your second, if I see you want one.

The courage and resolution of the slave very much surprized me. I admired at it; and, with difficulty, persuaded myself, that so much generosity was lodg'd in so weak and timorous a sex. I thank'd Mariola for her good advice, assured her, I approved of her following me in the manner she had proposed, and sent her to Zaide, to comfort her, and prevail with her not to trouble herself.

The time agreed upon being come, I took my arms, and went to the place appointed, without the gate; Mariola following

ing me in a few minutes time. Finding the garden-door open, I went in, and made the ſignal agreed upon between me and my enemy, to find one another. No body anſwering, I went to take a turn in a walk of bay trees; but ſcarce had I entered the walk, when I received a blow upon the back-part of my head, that took away a piece of the white ſcarf that was wrapt about my turban. Having my naked ſabre in my hand, I nimbly turned round, and, with a back-ſtroke, cut off half my adverſary's face. Being ſtunn'd with the blow, he fell down; of which I took the advantage, ſtamp'd upon his guts, and ſheath'd my ſabre in his heart, before he had time to cry out. Captain Antonio, who was by, hearing the blows, came to ſee how we ſtood affected, and ſeeing his maſter's corps extended upon the ground, would fain have ſatisfied his revenge, by cutting him in pieces; but I took hold of him, and told him, 'twas our beſt way, to bury the carcaſs, and conceal the action. Mariola, having look'd for us ſome time, at laſt eſpied us, and taking us for Joſuf's men, advanced towards us, with her ſabre in her hand; but as ſoon as ſhe found her miſtake, ſhe aſſiſted us, in digging a grave, to throw the body into. After this expedition, we returned home, where I found Zaide in a fit, in Gabrielle's arms;

to

to whom ſhe related the fight and victory; recommending it to her as a ſecret, which ſhe inviolably kept.

One of Joſuf's ſlaves, who was a Spaniard, born at Alicant, and who, tho' now about forty years of age, had been a ſlave almoſt from his childhood, and yet was ſo good a Chriſtian, that he was ready to ſuffer martyrdom for his religion; this Spaniard I ſay, who was an active ſtirring fellow, and could never well brook his ſlavery, tho' one would have thought it almoſt natural to him, came, ſoon after his maſter's death, and offered his ſervice to me. I asked him, whether Joſuf had any relations, and how one might know 'em? He anſwered, that that Turk had only correſpondents with whom he traffick'd; but that deſigning to fight with me, he had given out, that he was going a voyage to Conſtantinople, and ſo bid his friends adieu. This gave me great ſatisfaction; for now I had nothing to fear on his part; and knowing the polity of the Turks, who never correct hidden faults, nor puniſh ſeverely any thing but ſcandal, I continued to lead a quiet life; nor did any one ever pretend to ſpeak to me, or ask me a queſtion concerning the affair that had paſs'd between me and Joſuf.

The ſpring was now approaching, and the ladies having deſired me to go with 'em into

into the country, for ſome time, I deſired Antonio to contrive, in my abſence, ſome method for our eſcape, and to take in the Spaniard to his aſſiſtance. He aſſured me he would wait an opportunity, and deſired me to provide, in the mean while, Money enough to go thro' with our deſign.

The news of the taking of Candy gave the firſt overture for ſetting myſelf at liberty. The conqueſt of that iſland, which had coſt the Turks ſo much blood and treaſure, in the proſecution of a war of twenty four years, occaſioned ſuch an univerſal joy throughout the Ottoman empire, that all the cities thereof ſtrove to out-do each other in their tokens of gladneſs. Never was ſeen ſuch a number of illuminations and bonefires; and captain Antonio propoſed to me to let off fire-works upon the water, on that occaſion, as a fit one for us to make our eſcape. I bid him ſecure a brigantine, and Chriſtian ſlaves enough, diſguiſed like Turks, that would dare to undertake their flight. Every thing was ordered with an equal readineſs and precaution; and Signor Antonio promiſed to wait for me, behind a ſhelf, a league from Patras, with twenty five ſlaves of his acquaintance. The night appointed being come, as it was I that had given that entertainment to the city, to teſtify my zeal for the

empire. I found it an easy matter to persuade Zaide to go and see the sight. She not only consented, but dress'd herself in all her Jewels, and the best cloaths she had, and was attended, in her boat, by her eunuch and slaves. I had hired some Turkish rowers, to carry us, as soon as the sight was over, to a little country-seat, we had upon the sea-side, where we intended to lie, to avoid the trouble of a great company. Azemire, being indisposed, desired her old friend the Dervis to make one among us, and bring her a faithful account of our diversion. The Turks are great admirers of fire-works, in which they are very short of skill: And nothing could have more surpriz'd 'em, than our invention. The design was a moon of light, embracing the whole world, of a brimstone fire which dazzled the eyes of the spectators. This machine was fix'd upon the arch of an old bridge, whence issued thousands of rockets, and other fireworks of all kinds. Upon the water was an infinite number of boats, crowded with all the inhabitants of Patras, except the ladies, who saw the sight from the tops of their houses. But as I lived in another manner with Zaide, and she was always perplexing me with her importunate embraces, I desired her to dress herself, and all her women, in mans cloaths, and

to

to forget nothing that might render her appearance magnificent, and add to the honour of that joyful night. We took water about an hour after the diverſion was over, and the crowd returned home from viewing our machine of fire, and put out to ſea for Vitcanin, which was the pleaſure-houſe where we deſigned to lie. The watermen thought we were to land and ſtay there till the next day; and the ſervants in the houſe had notice of our intention; ſo that nobody had the leaſt jealouſy of our concerted flight. No ſooner were we come in ſight of the ſhelf, but the brigantine, who perceived us, ply'd their oars, and came upon us before we were aware. Zaide and her boat's crew immediately took her for a Turkiſh brigantine, who, knowing their company, had a mind to frighten 'em; but when ſhe ſaw herſelf and her women clapt in irons, and her waterman murdered and thrown overboard, ſhe looked upon herſelf as loſt, and ask'd me, whether it was I that had play'd that villainous trick, to make her amends for the affection ſhe had ſhewn me? I muſt needs ſay, this imputation touch'd me to the quick: However, I aſſured her I had no hand in it; and the better to perſuade her, fell a calling Signor Antonio all the names I could think of. The captain, who took me right, immediately

loaded me with irons; and ordered his men put on ſhoar, to land Zaide and her ſlaves. In vain did I beg of him to leave me my wife, or elſe throw me on ſhoar along with her; they only allowed her the Dervis and Gabrielle for companions; and that too, after they had ſtripped 'em all. I durſt not once turn my eyes towards the land; but ſtopp'd my ears to the outrages ſhe uttered againſt me. Some ſeamen afterwards gave me ſuch an account thereof, as defeated all my reſolution; and Gabrielle, whom I ſaw, ſome time after, at Rome, had like to have made me lay down my monk's habit, not being able to bear, with patience all ſhe told me of the calamitous condition of my family, of which I ſhall ſpeak in its proper place.

We ſet Zaide and her companions on ſhoar, five miles from Patras, and the fine weather continuing to favour us, we diſcovered Sicily after three days ſail. Moſt of the ſlaves that made their eſcape with me, were Italians or Maltheze. But among theſe were a Frenchman, born at Agde in Languedoc, a very honeſt fellow, to whom I owe my life; for he hindered the ungrateful captain Antonio from perpetrating the moſt perfidious and deviliſh villany that ever was committed. Zaide's jewels and rich cloaths tempted him, it ſeems, to undertake

dertake my murder; and, to put his black enterprize in execution, he had resolved, some time before we came to Maltha, to stab me and Mariola, and, after having stripped us, to throw us overboard. The Frenchman was one of the conspirators, and had promised to join and assist the others; but having landed, with part of our company, by reason the wind was come contrary, he desired me to call Pietrocio, (for that was the name Mariola then went by) and come to him. Then stepping aside, he told me, that he was going to communicate a secret of the last importance to me; that Antonio had resolved to murder me for the lucre of my riches; that himself was one of the accomplices; but that he had never entered into that villanous design, only to avoid giving occasion of mistrust to those traitors; and, that to convince me of his sincerity, and that what he said was true, he had resolved to make his escape with us, and not return to the Brigantine. I had, indeed, before observ'd those seamen to make a private signal among themselves, but never imagined they were capable of so hellish a design! I delivered those miscreants from the wretched'st slavery; and provided riches enough to satisfy 'em, and send them home in a tolerable plight! And to reward me, they harbour'd

the

the bloody design of murdering me! I gave thanks to God, for vouchsafing to deliver me from so imminent a danger; and promised to adhere only to him, and to break with all the rest of the world. —— Let us therefore, save ourselves, says I to my deliverer, and avoid those Barbarians, who thirst after our blood, as well as our estates. My companions consenting, we immediately made from the sea-coast, travell'd up into the country all night, and by break of day, were got about thirteen or fourteen miles from the sea side: But that journey cost me all the skin of my feet; and poor Pietrocio was so lame he could scarce stand. Being still in our Turkish habits, we march'd in fear, every moment, lest any one should meet us, and raise the neighbouring villages upon us, whose inhabitants, we knew, would use us very roughly, and strip us of every rag of our cloaths. I had a very fine diamond about me, a girdle quite covered with turcois-stones, and about some two or three hundred Sequins in money: And tho' this was nothing in comparison of what I had left in the Brigantine, yet I was so glad I had escaped captain Antonio's perfidious design, that I had no regard either to my weariness, or to my loss. I desir'd monsieur Isnard, my Frenchman, to go to the next village, and buy cloaths for Pietrocio

and

and me; while we ſtaid for him in an old ruin'd houſe, which we ſhew'd him. Having given him the money requiſite for this purpoſe, he executed his Commiſſion with ſo much dexterity and addreſs, that he returned in the evening, with ſeven or eight ells of coarſe woollen cloth, and ſome linnen, and other things ſufficient to make us three a ſuit of ſeamens cloaths each. Nor had he forgot bread and wine for our inſides, while he took care of our outſides. He inform'd us, farther, that we were in the territories of Lagoſta, and that it was but four days journey, thence, by land, to Meſſina, and one days voyage by ſea. We made it our firſt buſineſs to make our tar dreſſes; and for that end, tarried three days in the ruin'd houſe, which being ſituate on the top of a little hill, gave us a charming proſpect of the ſea, and of every the leaſt veſſel that approach'd the land. In that time, Pietrocio ſowing extremely well, and Iſnard being not far behind him in that art, our cloaths were finiſhed, and we were complete ſailors. The day after we had run away from our Brigantine, we perceived her to return to the very bay in which we lan'ed; and the fear I was in, leſt that curſed crew ſhould go in queſt of us, made me very impatient till Iſnard was returned from the village I had ſent him to. As ſoon as he arrived, we

told

told him the grounds of our apprehenſions; but he inſpired us with freſh courage: For being an excellent pilot, and skill'd in all the parts of navigation, he aſſured us, that the Brigantine had been obliged to put back upon thoſe coaſts, by reaſon ſhe had, while at ſea, met with a wind directly contrary to their paſſage to Maltha; and that it would be impoſſible for her to budge from thence, before the wind chopped about. This anſwer gave us ſo great ſatisfaction, that we ſlept more ſecurely than we had done before. As ſoon as it was day, to work we went, all three upon our cloaths; and arriving, the third day, at a village three leagues from our ruins, we there received advice, that a Turkiſh galley had brought on ſhoar a Brigantine of ſlaves, who had made their eſcape from Patras. And this news was brought thither but the day before, by one of the ſlaves, who had had the good fortune to give the infidels the ſlip.

At laſt, we arrived at Lagoſta, which town is one of the fineſt monuments of the grandeur of the ancient Romans, for the many curious antiquities that are ſtill to be ſeen there: Particularly, the remains of the temple dedicated to Galetea, which ſtands upon the ſea ſide; Polyphemus's den, and the great ſhelf, that is reported to be the

the rock, which that giant plucked from the mountain, to crush Acis. The place is situate upon one of the pleasantest coasts in the universe; and its inhabitants are very courteous, and good musicians. There are but few noblemen among 'em; but then the burghers are so polite and accomplished, that I forgot all the fatigues of my journey, upon the agreeable reception they gave us.

We pretended to be Sicilian seamen cast away; for we had no marks of the Turk, having buried our cloaths in the ruins which we had just before made our lodgings. So, having tarried at Lagosta, seven or eight days, to rest our weary limbs, we then set out, by land, for Messina, where we arriv'd, after a march of three days.

The first thing I did, after I came to Messina, was, to go directly to the church door, not daring to enter that holy place: There I kneel'd, and return'd my thanks to God, acknowledging Jesus Christ for my Lord and Saviour, and imploring his pardon for the scandal I might have brought upon the christian religion, by my feign'd apostacy. This done, I repair'd to the bishop's palace, and having given him a relation of my adventures, I begged of him, that he would be pleased to reconcile me to the church, and assur'd him, that my apostacy was more to be attributed to weak-

 ness

neſs than to wickedneſs. The reverend prelate granted my requeſt, and finding me very well inſtructed in the myſteries of our religion, and entirely perſuaded in its truth, ordered me a retirement and probation only of eight days, after which he performed the ceremony of my re onciliation, before the altar of our lady of the letter, in the cathedral. Pietrocio found his family turned topſy-turvey, in his ten years abſence. His father and mother were dead; and 'twas in vain for him to uſe arguments to his brother the phycian, to perſuade him he was his brother. That gentleman would by no means own Pietrocio; but pretended to tell him poſitively, that the brother whoſe name he aſſum'd was loſt off of Lipari, a Turkiſh corſair having ſunk the barque, on board of which he was; that he might have learnt the particu'ars of that action, as almoſt all the inhabitants of Meſſina then did; that he might, therefore, go look for his Dupes elſewhere; for that he had nothing to do with their family. ——— As I was walking upon the wharf, one day, after my retirement, Pietrocio met me, and embracing me, let fall a ſhower of tears. —— Would I were ſtill at Patras, with my miſtreſſes! ſays he; for the Turks have more generoſity and humanity in 'em, than my neareſt relations! By what evil fate was I thrown

into

into bondage for the ſpace of ten years? Or, by what more cruel deſtiny is it enacted, may I ſay, that upon my return, my friends won't deign to look upon me, force me to beg my bread, or ſtarve! I aſſur'd him, that I would never be unmindful of the ſervices he had render'd me; and to convince him of my ſincerity, added, that I would moſt willingly divide what money I had, between him and me. I told him at the ſame time, that I had ſome thoughts of retiring from the clutter of the world into the monaſtery. Nevertheleſs, as I did not very well know what to reſolve upon, I tarry'd ſome months, at Meſſina, in hopes of hearing of my dear lady the marchioneſs of T——, before I enter'd upon my fix'd courſe of life. It was my misfortune, not to know any particular perſon at Naples, from whom I might promiſe myſelf advices of that kind; but, at laſt, I ſtruck acquaintance with Signor Citrani, a merchant of Meſſina, who engaged to ſatisfy my curioſity. This gentleman had a ſon, about one or two and twenty years old, who was going for Naples, and with whom I entruſted a letter for the marchioneſs; and having ſhewn him her picture, which I had ſtill kept, he promiſed to let me hear from her within a month. During that time I liv'd very pleaſant and jo vial life Pietrocio's

excellent voice had recommended him to the governor, who, having heard the account he gave of himſelf, ſoon oblig'd his relations to own him; and as he, by this means became familiar with the nobility, I was preſent at all their diverſions, I had procur'd myſelf a very genteel dreſs, and had money enough to maintain myſelf in that figure for ſix months. The deſign I had of retiring, in a ſmall time, into the monaſtery, made me very laviſh of my gold, and careleſs whether I could get more or not; inſomuch that I made nothing to give entertainments, and go a ſerenading the ladies, for whom I pretended a paſſionate affection. I auſſm'd the title of the marquis Piroti, and then firſt learnt, that money will give a man what figure he pleaſes to take, mean time, three months were already paſs'd, ſince young Citrani went for Naples; and tho' I went to his father's every day, could hear nothing of him or my dear marchioneſs. At laſt, they told me, he had been like to die, but that he was now expected home in about a week. No ſooner, therefore, did I hear of his return, but I ran to embrace him; and asking him, as ſoon as I had an opportunity, how my lady did, he gave me to underſtand, I was unfortunate, and that the things he had to tell me, would require more time than he

could

could ſpare that night, by reaſon he had a great deal of company in the houſe; and therefore, deſired me to meet him the next morning in the cloiſters of the Cordeliers, where he would give me the whole relation. I was to ſup that night with the governor; and we were to go upon the water behind the Salvator, which is a citadel at the mouth of the harbour, the gardens there being charming'ſt of all Sicily. The fineſt illumination that ever I ſaw in my life, ſerv'd to render our voyage as light, as if it were made by day. The ladies were gone before, and had made us, againſt our arrival, a thouſand pretty garlands, adorned with cyphers of love and gallantry. A young widow, for whom I pretended the moſt violent paſſion, plaid me ſeveral amorous tricks upon my arrival, and among the reſt, threw a full pail of orange water at me. Never was evening ſpent with greater pleaſure and enjoyment; and I don't remember that ever I was at a more magnificent treat, than was made for the entertainment of that illuſtrious company. Every one appeared with an air of gaiety and mirth, and I was the only gentleman that ſeemed, as it were ſerious, and inſenſible of the pleaſure others took. Some ladies perceiving my melancholy humour, were pleaſed to banter me about it; and the more I endeavoured to

ſhake

ſhake it off, the more it conquered me, and grew upon my ſpirits. My little widow asking me, and as we were going back to Meſſina, what made me ſo penſive and thoughtful; inſtead of making her a brisk anſwer, which might have excuſed me, and given her ſatisfaction, I was ſuch a fool, as to tell her, I had a fit of the cholick, which very much diſcompoſed me. That anſwer was ſufficient to make me the ſubject of the ladies raillery all the way home: and the young widow not having a real affection for me, reſolved to divert herſelf at my expence. Accordingly, reaching our lodgings about twelve of the clock at night, by that time I was half undreſſed, they came to tell me, that a man at the door wanted to ſpeak with me about earneſt buſineſs. I bid my landlord deſire the man to come up; but how like a fool did I look, when I ſaw an Apothecary's apprentice pulling a gliſter pipe out of his pocket; and praying me to lie down a little, and he would do the jobb in the twinkling of an eye! I thanked him for his remedy; but told him I had no occaſion for it. The more reſolute I appeared not to take it, the more the fellow redoubled his inſtances to prevail with me to do it. At laſt, I got rid of him, with much ado, but could not for my life, make him tell me whence he came. Well: I was no

ſooner

ſooner laid down in my bed, but they rapped at my door again; and a king what they wanted, they anſwered, that it was another gliſter for me. And in this manner was I plagued almoſt the whole night, not being able to take a wink of ſleep, for the inſolence of thoſe Bumpeepers. At laſt, the tenth coming, I was reſolved he ſhould be the laſt, and for that reaſon, having locked my chamber-door upon him, I clapped my dagger to his breaſt, and ſwore all the oaths my paſſion ſuggeſted to me, that if he would not do as I bid him, I'd murder him. Then I commanded him to empty his gliſter into a cloſe ſtool pan, and drink it every drop, out of the ſame. The truth is, I was ſo enraged, that if he had made but the leaſt heſitation, I ſhould certainly have ſtabbed him in a thouſand places; but he ſaved his skin, by executing my naſty orders. This action made a great noiſe at Meſſina; and the young man's maſter, the Apothecary, went and complained of the violence done to a member of the faculty. The governor, to whom the little widow had, at firſt imparted her deſign, as to the cure of my cholick, did nothing but laugh at him, and forbid the Apothecary from offering me the leaſt affront upon that ſcore, on pain of death. This piece of raillery, however, balked me from ever going to court after-

afterwards my purſe began to feel light, and I was no longer able to hold on the courſe of life I had led for three or four months paſt.

As ſoon as it was day, I repair'd to the place of appointment, the cordelier's cloiſter, to wait for young ſignor Catrani. Nor was I long there, before that gent'eman came to me; and we embraced each other with abundance of civility and affection. Compliments being over, he told me, that he was come to give me an account of the commiſſion I had entruſted him withal to Naples; That he had done all the faithful'ſt friend could do; and, that he would tell me ſuch particulars, as ſhould, at once, convince me of his friendſhip and punctuality.

As ſoon as I had diſpatch'd certain affairs, ſays he, which wou d admit of no delay, I went to the count of P——'s, to enquire what was become of his daughter, and his old ſiſter, at whoſe houſe you had plac'd Roſalia. Coming to the door, I asked for the oldeſt ſervant belonging to the houſe; whereupon, they call'd one Rotilio to me, who aſſur'd me, that he had been there from a boy.—— I know him, anſwer'd I, interrupting Citrani; he is crooked, and has a ſmiling aſpect.——The ſame, continued he; and now I'll tell you what paſs'd between him and me in a converſation of two hours. I open'd

open'd the conference, by assuring him, that I was come from Sicily to Naples, about affairs of no less importance than the recovery of certain papers upon which the quiet and welfare of my whole family depended; and that I had receiv'd information, that I might light of intelligence at the count of P——'s, or the marchioness's, his daughter's, which might be of great service to me. I had no sooner named the marchioness, but the poor fellow utter'd a deep sigh! and,——what can you learn of the unfortunate marchioness! says he; since the count of P——, her father, died of grief, that he was not able to hear of her for four years together, before his death. Her spouse has been in castle St. Elmo ever since that time, to make him give an account of his behaviour towards a lady of the marchioness's prudence and wisdom. 'Tis the general opinion, that she was poison'd at Palinure, where, 'tis certain, she was, about four years ago, and whence she was never seen to return to Naples. Her aunt dispatch'd messengers to all parts of Europe, in quest of her, and sent her picture to every monastery in Christendom, to see whether possibly, she might be shut up in any of those places of retirement! but all to no manner of purpose; and so, in the ruin of that lady, we see that of three or four families involv'd! I

desir'd to know whether she had not written, or left any letter to signify the cause of her departure? that's what my lord marquis is imprison'd for, says Rotilio; they would have him speak to that point, and he has nothing to say. He swears, that he has never given his lady any other occasion of discontent, than by his absence and youthful follies; and that he is neither guilty of her death, nor of her escape. I ask'd my Æsop, whether I might, by any means, speak with Rosalia? she's dead, answer'd he, as well as the marchioness; or else they are both far enough from hence.

This discourse of young Citrani had made such an impression upon me, that I was forced to sit down, to prevent my falling. That gentleman perceiving my concern and weakness, offer'd to assist me to the best of his power; but I thank'd him, and desir'd him to leave me alone a little, to make some reflexions on my unhappy fate.

So that finding nothing but a heap of misfortunes in this part of the world, I resolved to set out for Utrecht. By that time I got thither, I was not worth above fifty pistoles in the world; and so, was oblig'd to think of putting myself in some way to get money, in a country, where there is plenty of that useful commodity, and whose inhabitants are of a nature and genius agreeable enough

to

to promote the ſucceſs of my talents. I advis'd, therefore, with ſome people what I had beſt to do; and after ſeveral conſultations, I determin'd, that I could not do better, than keep a coffee-houſe. There was one difficulty in the affair; and that was, that permiſſiſſion muſt firſt be obtain'd of the magiſtrates, who are jealous of the privileges of their burghers, and, conſequently, not very forward to grant foreigners any thing that may be prejudicial to the inhabitants. Thus was I forced to have recourſe to ſome ſtratagem, and give, at the ſame time, (as I deſir'd) a kind of ſpecimen of my prodigious knowledge. And this was the method I took.

Every one knows, that the city of Utrecht is famous for its univerſity, which draws to it abundance of Foreigners; and eſpecially, Germans, (a nation that ever robb'd me.) As I was a new comer, and had a very ſerious aſpect, every body took me for ſome perſon of importance; and I was become the town talk for my obliging carriage, and happy looks, which were equally agreeable to all that convers'd with me, I was frequently in company with men of letters, and the magiſtrates themſelves, whom I always endeavour'd to engage in my intereſts, by diſcourſes which might convince 'em of the little merit heaven had endued me withal.

As I perceiv'd more and more, that they were pleas'd with my reasonings, I was confirm'd in the opinion of presenting a petition to the magistrates, for leave to set up a coffee house; which I did in Latin; the substance whereof was this.

PETITION:

My Lords,

HAving the honour to arrive, some days ago, in your celebrated city, I found it so well worthy my attention, that maugre all the resolutions I had taken to go farther, I perceiv'd myself under an obligation to stay here, to admire, and at the same time, to help to cultivate this garden fraught with the most sublime sciences. This, therefore, is my design, my lords; and if, of two favours which I propose to you, you will vouchsafe to grant me one, I shall never think of any other abode, than the famous and charming city of Utrecht. I am, my lords, a man of the highest extraction, next that of kings. The religion in which I was born, has hitherto render'd me unhappy, because of the contrary opinion I was ever of, to it, which (according to the lights that God had given me) I could never forbear maintaining, even in the places where I had the greatest reason to be afraid. But, at last, God be thanked, I am arriv'd in the port

port of rest and safety, shelter'd from the violence of all the mercilefs persecutors of the true gospel of Jesus Christ. Thus gentlemen, seeing, without ostentation, I am very well vers'd in divinity, of which I am ready to give you sufficient proof, whenever requir'd so to do; I take the boldness to intreat you to be pleas'd to grant me the favour I ask you; to wit, that I may exercise in this place, the office of professor of divinity. Or, if I should be so unfortunate, as not to be thought worthy that honourable charge, that you would be pleas'd, at least, to permit me to sell coffee. I assure you, that I shall be equally oblig'd to you, for one or other of these two employs, whichsoever you will please to allow me; since I shall always esteem it the highest pitch of my happiness, to live in your illustrious city, tho' in the most servile employ; provided, however, that it furnish me with opportunities of convincing you, with what submission and respect, I am, &c.

Having drawn up this petition, I deliver'd it, about ten at night, into the hands of a secretary of the town-house, with whom I had got acquainted and who had supp'd with me that evening. He promis'd me good success in all that I desir'd, and took his leave of me for that night. The next day about noon, he came to my lodgings with

an

an air of melancholy; of which having ask'd him the cause, he told me, that he was very much vex'd, that the magistrates had only granted me leave to sell Coffee; and that it was no better than affronting merit, to treat me thus. Thereupon, I pretended too, not to be overjoy'd with that proceeding; but told him withal, that he need not, in the least, trouble himself about it, for that, I took it, however, as a great favour, that the council had so far answer'd my petition, with which I was very well satisfy'd. I made him a small present, and desir'd him to do me the honour, to continue to come and see me now and then. I knew well enough, before-hand, that they would not give me the professor's chair; which, indeed, I was so far from desiring, that I should have been heartily vex'd, if they had assign'd it me; by reason that was not the way to make my fortune. But, however, the turn that I gave to my petition establish'd my project, which was, to sell Coffee. As soon as the secretary was gone, I went and communicated my news to one Janine, (who being very handsome, I had taken for my bedfellow) who receiv'd it with extreme joy. All that now remain'd for us to do, was, to pitch upon a method for putting our design in execution. And this prov'd a matter of no great difficulty,

difficulty, by reaſon we were acquainted with monſieur C——, a perſon of great credit, who procur'd us a houſe very proper for the buſineſs. The houſe being hired, I furniſh'd it as well as I could, and open'd my Coffee-room in four Days.

I can't expreſs to you the concourſe of people that came to me for ſome time. curioſity was ſo prevalent with the gentry as well as commonalty, to ſee ſuch a man as I in a coffee-room, that Janine, the maid, and myſelf, had not time to eat a bit of of victuals from morning to night.

So proſperous a beginning did not fail to puff me up with tow'ring hopes; inſomuch that I did not, in the leaſt, doubt of making my fortune in this new country. The better to puſh my ſucceſs, I left no ſtone unturn'd, to preſerve and advance my credit; which was no hard matter for me to do, as ſoon as I could get the converſation of men of letters. It was in that ſort of company, (of which my ſhop was always full) that I put on my ſerious looks, and could never forbear laughing in my ſleeve, at the different poſtures with which gentlemen liſten'd to my Diſcourſe. It would be impoſſible for me to relate here, all the ſubjects upon which I was oblig'd to diſpute. Suffice it, that I always came off with admiration and applauſe; inſomuch that

that never did oracle make ſuch an impreſſion on thoſe who conſulted it, as I did upon all that heard me diſcourſe. This gain'd me ſuch a reputation among the learned, that I never had a moment to myſelf: And as I had ſtretch'd ſeveral times upon the ſubject of Aſtronomy and the Cabala, the dutcheſs of —— was ſo eager to hear me, that ſhe came on purpoſe from the Hague. She no ſooner arrived at Utrecht, but ſhe ſent her gentleman to me, and hers was the firſt coach that ever ſtopp'd at my door, to tell me, that her grace wanted to ſpeak with me. I deſir'd the gentleman to walk in, and ſit down a moment while I got myſelf ready, and took a few curioſities with me, which I had a mind to ſhew her grace. Then going up to my cloſet, I equipp'd myſelf in a moment, and provided myſelf with every thing that might be neceſſary for me in the converſation of the dutcheſs of ——. For, as I did not know the ſubject of her coming, I took the precaution to furniſh myſelf againſt any occaſion; which put me to a great deal of trouble, the ſeveral engines I had about me, having enlarg'd my ſize, in ſuch a manner, that I could ſcarce get into the coach. One of theſe I call'd Etna, becauſe of the relation it had to mount Etna, which ſent forth a continual ſmoke, as ſoon as open'd. I

had

had ſeven others, which I called the ſeven planets, in which, by words and grimaces that I made, I ſhew'd ſeveral different figures, which gave a moſt agreeable ſurprize. In the other pocket I had a magical lanthorn, of ſuch wonderful make, that the like was never ſeen; for as ſoon as ever I ſhew'd the light, a hundred ſeveral monſters appear'd in the chamber. In one of my breeches-pockets, I had a Cylinder, which I learnt to make of a quack-doctor at Venice. That Cylinder is a kind of column of poliſh'd braſs, about half a foot high, which I placed upon paper ſcribled over almoſt like Algebra; and ſo ſhew, in the column, whatever figures I pleaſe. In my other breeches-pocket, I had a magical rod, and a box full of perfumes which I brought with me out of Italy. In this equipage I arrived at the dutcheſs's, who was impatient to ſee me, and receiv'd me with particular marks of eſteem. I made her my compliments in Italian, which language I knew ſhe underſtood very well. Thoſe aſide, ſhe took me into her cloſet, where, when we had ſeated ourſelves, ſhe begun to queſtion me upon the ſubject of religion; in which point I gave her entire ſatisfacton, and ſhe ſeem'd to be very well pleas'd with me. But, to let you ſee, madam, ſays I, the artifices made uſe of by the Popiſh prieſts, to ter-

rify the common people. Look about you. With that I took out my magical lanthorn, and having lighted the candle, the chamber was immediately fill'd with monſters; which ſo frightned the dutcheſs, that ſhe was about to run away. As ſoon as I perceived her fright, I aſſur'd her, that ſhe need not fear any thing; for, all that ſhe ſaw was by meer trick: And to convince her of the truth of what I ſaid, I open'd my lanthorn, and ſhew'd her the whole invention. Thereupon, ſhe took courage, and deſired me to play my engine once more. No, madam, anſwer'd I, you muſt now ſee ſomething more worthy your admiration. Only ſit down, and obſerve what I am going to ſhew you. Then I drew a box out of my pocket, and having open'd it, took out, in the firſt place, my Ampolla fumente, or Smoaking-Bottle, which I had no ſooner open'd, but it ſo amaz'd the dutcheſs, that ſhe begg'd of me to ſhut it again as ſoon as poſſible; for as the cloſet was but ſmall, it was, in a moment, ſo full of that thick ſmoke. that we could ſcarce ſee the light. Good God! cry'd the dutcheſs, What a ſtrange man are you! Open the window quickly; for your Etna has almoſt ſmother'd me. I obey'd her; and the cloud vaniſh'd away immediately. I offer'd to ſhew her grace my other ſeven magical bodies

dies; but ſhe prevented me, by telling me abſolutely, ſhe would not expoſe herſelf to any more ſuch dangers; that I had nothing to do but to ſhut up my ſhop; and that ſhe would converſe with me half an hour longer upon other ſubjects. I obey'd her upon condition, that her grace ſhould permit me to ſhew her a wonder, with which, I aſſur'd her, ſhe ſhould be very well pleaſed. She conſented; and I then pulled out my Cylinder. She ſeemed very much ſurprized at all the metamorphoſes I ſhewed her; but much more ſo, when, at laſt, I ſhew'd her her own picture, which perfectly reſembled her. Figure to yourſelf what a ſurprize it put her in. In a word, this engag'd all her curioſity; and having given me to underſtand, that ſhe ſhould take it kindly, if I would diſcloſe to her that piece of art, I told her, that I would not only do it with pleaſure, but, if ſhe pleas'd, would make her a preſent of ſuch a machine. She accepted it very willingly; and, after ſeveral other diſcourſes, preſented me with fifty piſtoles. All this gave me ſuch life and vigour in my buſineſs, and ſo augmented the flattering hopes I had already conceiv'd, that I was no longer betwixt hawk and buzzard, as to my fortune, but look'd upon it as already made in the city of Utrecht.

In a word, my days ſlid away ſo agreeably, that had it not been for a blind paſſion that govern'd me, never had mortal been happier than I was. But as fate always ſentenced me to a hundred pains for one pleaſure I enjoy'd, i'll tell you how I was ſerv'd.

A young milk-maid, that came conſtantly to my houſe every morning and evening, to ſerve me with milk for the uſe of my coffee room, ſeem'd to me ſo charming and agreeable, that maugre all my reſolutions, I was forced to ſubmit to the ſuperior power of love, I conſidered her attentively every time I ſaw her, and found her beauty ſo incomparably perfect, that the more I gaz'd on her the more I admir'd her; and my paſſion grew from great to greater. And is it poſſible, ſays I, to myſelf, that nature produced ſuch a maſter piece, to oblige her to creep under the weight of the moſt abject fortunes? Ah! Inhumane nature, cry'd I; can one look upon ſuch a finiſh'd beauty, as thou haſt made, without trembling? can any one, I ſay, ſee her ſerve animals that are even the greateſt brutes upon earth? and be oblig'd to go from door to door, to earn her living? permit me, therefore, O cruel nature, to reproach thee with hard treatment! but, fool that I am! ought I thus to fall foul on nature? would I not much rather

ther give her her praiſes due, for having ſent ſuch a finiſh'd creature into the world! 'tis therefore, owing to fate; and of him I ought to complain! but, alas! 'tis to the ſame fate, that I am indebted for ſuch an inestimable jewel! juſt as I was making theſe reflexions within myſelf, I heard the voice of that lovely girl cry, as uſual, D'ye want any milk? at that, I went down, and reſolv'd to follow her, to know where ſhe liv'd. For that end, I went out, while the maid was taking in the milk; and being got a little diſtance from my houſe, waited for the milk maid's coming out, deſigning to dodge her home, after having led me thro' a hundred turnings and windings in the city, ſhe went thro' the gate of Amſterdam, and hous'd at a little cottage, about musket ſhot from that gate. I made no queſtion, but that was the place where ſhe liv'd; but to make ſure work on't, went by the door, and found I had gueſs'd right. That intrigue commenced in the charming month of June! a ſeaſon in which the inhabitants of Utrecht uſe to go in great numbers, and eat cream, and drink a ſillabub in the villages; and ſerv'd as a fit opportunity for me to introduce myſelf into the milk maid's company, and take the neceſſary meaſures to gratify a paſſion, that began to conſume me.

One Sunday in the afternoon, therefore, I

went,

went, for the firſt time to the milk maid's mud houſe, which I had no ſooner enter'd, but I found all things concurring to render me happy, the beauty being all alone, and her mother gone to church. The charming peaſant was ſo neatly dreſs'd, and ſet off with ſo many pretty ornaments, that they made a wonderful addition to her beauty. Think, how glad I was, to find her all alone; and how confounded, that I could not converſe with her for one moment: for as I could not ſpeak Dutch, I had all the difficulty in the world, to make her underſtand, that I wanted half a pint of cream; and my gibberiſh put her into ſeveral fits of laughter and merriment, and the like, in which, however, ſhe behav'd herſelf with that modeſty, that ſhe inchanted me. I had been two hours admiring that lovely perſon when her mother came home from church. The old woman no ſooner enter'd the doors, but Chriſtina, ſays ſhe, in Dutch, get you to church. At the name of Chriſtina, I was ſtruck with ſuch a terror, that I knew not where I was; for I preſently thought of the Chriſtina, to whom I was indebted for great part of my miſeries. Mean time, I was too deep ſtruck with my lovely milk maid, to retain ſuch reflexions long: And as it grew late, beſides, I thought of returning home. I therefore, made ſigns to the mother, and asked

asked her as well as I could, what ſhe muſt have? ſhe told me, ſixpence. But I paid her at a better rate; for clapping a ducatoon into her hand, I ſhut it, and gave her to underſtand that I would give it her all. Thereupon I obſerved ſuch a mixture of joy and confuſion both in the mother and daughter. Mean time, they kept my money, and I returned home very melancholy. I had no ſooner entered the doors, but Janine asked me, where I had been all the afternoon? and that with ſuch an air, as if ſhe had obſerved ſome diſorder in me. I told her, I had been to hear a noted miniſter, and taken a walk in the fields with him after ſermon; and pretending to be very weary, bid her turn down my bed. I ſpent the night in dreaming of methods to render myſelf more familiar with my young milk-maid; but could think of none, that did not ſeem to me impracticable; ſince ſhe ſpoke nothing but Dutch which I did not underſtand. On the other hand, my paſſion was too vehement, to go off ſo. My diſeaſe was deſperate, and, therefore, ~~and therefore,~~ requir'd a deſperate cure.

At laſt, a notion came into my head, that I would teach this young milk-maid French; and I ſucceeded in that enterprize, according to wiſh, by means of a poor maſter of languages with whom I was acquainted.

quainted. I went to his lodgings the next day, and having lock'd his chamber-door after me, engaged him, by an oath, not to discover to any person, the secret I was going to communicate to him. After which, I address'd him thus: "There's ten pistoles for you, my dear friend, if you can persuade the person I shall direct you to, to learn so much of the French tongue, as to understand one that talks to her in that language, and to express herself in the same. I met with no difficulty, in engaging that honest fellow in my interests: He no sooner heard the sound of ten pistoles, but he was on tip-toe to serve me. I, therefore, told him the Person, and pointed out the house to him, at a distance; after which, he assured me, that he would compass all that I could desire; and that if I would only give myself the trouble of coming to him again the next day, he would certainly give me a positive answer, because he was very well known in that house, and the mother put a great confidence in him; and, therefore, I hed no cause to fear."

I return'd home very well satisfy'd, and full of hopes; expecting with the utmost impatience, the hour appointed for our rendezvous the next day. But I must here acquaint my readers, that when first I became sensible of my growing passion for that charm-

charming peasant, and conceiv'd the design of making her my mistress, I always endeavour'd to keep out of her sight, and contented myself with the pleasure of seeing her thro' the glass-windows. For as I had taken the resolution, to go and see her home, I had no mind to let her know it. And this precaution which I took to conceal myself was highly necessary.

I did not fail the next day, to go to the master of languages, at the time appointed. I went up to his chamber trembling, for fear he had miscarry'd in his attempt: But (the worse luck for me) he had but too well succeeded. For having learnt my passion, from the first word I spoke to him, he had so well play'd his part with the mother of my lov'd object, that she not only consented her daughter should learn French, but gave me free liberty to come and see her as often as I pleas'd. He had, indeed, attack'd the old woman, on her weak side, and us'd the ready method to draw her into the snare; to-wit, by representing to her the great advantages that might accrue to her from this adventure. She was a poor widow, who, with her daughter, liv'd only upon the profit arising from the milk of three or four cows. She had liv'd very well in her husband's life-time; insomuch that the remembrance of time past, heighten'd her hopes

of that which was future, and oblig'd her to accept, ſo much the more willingly, the propoſal made to her. But I proceed now, to tell you, how my little ſpark, the maſter of languages, manag'd her.

'Tis not, dear Jacomine, ſaid he, (for that was the mother's name) to drink milk, as uſual, that I am come hither to-day; No, 'tis upon quite another ſcore. I am come to inform you of the happineſs that attends both you and your daughter; and, provided you give credit to what I ſay, and lay aſide all ſcruples, I dare promiſe you, your fortune is made.—— You know, my dear, added he, that I have always been your friend, and ever taken a pleaſure in rendering you any ſervice. As I believe, you are ſufficiently perſuaded of this truth, I deſire you to hearken a little to what I ſhall ſay to you. There is a gentleman in town, who, tho' a foreigner, is yet a man of ſingular probity, and ſomewhat advanced in years. He is not a young, flaſhy coxcomb; you have already ſeen him yourſelf in this very houſe: He is very rich, and loves your daughter even to deſpair. Nor is there any thing he would not undertake, to obtain her mutual affection. For the reſt, I can aſſure you, That his ſentiments are untainted and inviolable; and that he really deſigns to make the fair Chriſtina, one day, his wife.

wife. But as his affairs don't permit him to divulge the matter, till after a certain time, he only desires, you would, in the mean while, grant him leave to come and see your daughter, and declare to her the violent passion he has entertain'd in her behalf. For this reason, he has thought fit to pitch upon me for his confident, and press'd me to make you consent to Christina's learning French of me. Moreover, he charged me to tell you, that his purse is at your command; and that it is only in your power to determine, whether he shall be happy or miserable. This is what I had to say to you; and now what remains but for you to tell me your thoughts upon the matter?——Why, my thoughts, answer'd the unwary Jacomine, are exactly conformable to yours in this point; provided only, that your words are accompany'd with sincerity: For, if I mistake not, the gentleman you speak of, is the very same, that gave us, on Sunday last, a Ducatoon for a measure of milk. I believe so too, mother; answer'd the daughter; for all the while he was here, his eyes were ever off me; and I knew well enough by his looks, that he came for something else, besides drinking of cream. He seem'd to me, reply'd the old woman, to be as honest a man as ever liv'd; and if so be he does but act like a loyal lover, (as you

me hope he will) and likes my daughter, I ſhall willingly leave the whole matter to the providence of God, to be diſpos'd according to his will, relying entirely upon you.——And as the daughter expreſs'd no diſlike, concluded the maſter of languages, I appointed a rendezvous between you for to morrow, that you may ſettle all things to the ſatisfaction of both parties.

I liſten'd attentively to all that my gentleman ſaid; and tho' I was overjoy'd, that neither the mother nor the daughter had rejected my propoſal, yet I was vex'd at the ſame time, that the maſter had gone beyond his commiſſion, in advancing things which I had not once thought of. Perceiving my chagrin,——I find, ſir, ſays he, with a very ſerious air, that I ſhall be finely rewarded for the good offices I have endeavoured to render you, in the quality of confident of a paſſion that conſumes you; tho' nobody but myſelf could, in the firſt interview, have carry'd things to ſuch a height as I have done: Nor indeed could I have done it myſelf, had not I been particularly well acquainted in the houſe, and the mother and daughter repos'd an entire confidence in me. Well, I perceive, repeated he, that I am like to be glorioufly rewarded, but this ſhall ſerve as a warning to me, not to trouble my head, for the future, with the

affairs of persons I don't know. He had gone on in this strain, had not I interrupted him, and desir'd him to moderate his passion, about an affair that was not worth it. I told him that I was honest and fair; and that far from disapproving what he had done for me, I should think myself eternally oblig'd to him for it, provided he would go thro' stitch with a work he had so happily begun. I found, that I had to do with a meer Dulman, who could not distinguish just from earnest; and that I could not avoid the engagement I had enter'd into; the rather, because it was no longer in my power to rid myself of my passion, without making away my life with it. I begun, therefore, with giving him the ten pistoles I had promis'd him, and conjured him to continue to act with fidelity in that important affair, recommending it to him, withal, to be discreet and prudent in the management thereof. I assured him, farther, that I would make him ample amends for the trouble he was at upon my account: Wherefore, he protested, on his part, with the most solemn oaths, that I might confide in him, as safely as in myself. Things thus set to rights between my master and me; and considering, the hour appointed drew near, I desir'd him to go along with me, that we might appear to be men of our words. In short,

ſhort, we arrived at my milk-maids, exactly at three o'clock. Going into the room, I took her by the hand, and kiſs'd it; and not being able to expreſs myſelf to her in the language which ſhe underſtood, I convinced her, by my eyes, how far the ſight of her tranſported me. The charming Chriſtina, as baſhful as ſhe was, gave me evident proofs, how much ſhe reckon'd upon the felicity her future maſter had flatter'd her withal. I made the ſame compliment to the mother, as to the daughter; after which, we ſat down, and begun to diſcourſe the point. In a word, the reſult of the conference was, That the milk maid would begin to learn French, and be glad to ſee me; provided I would give her my word, and promiſe, before God, to marry her, as ſoon as my affairs would permit; and the maſter of languages to be witneſs to that marriage: And farther, that if when I had marry'd her, I ſhould carry her into my own country, I would likewiſe take her mother along with me. I concluded from theſe words, that they ſtudy'd in the night what conditions to put to me; and that what the maſter of languages had ſaid to them the day before, had made too great an impreſſion upon their minds. I was too much wrapt up with the charming Chriſtina to deliberate, a moment, upon the propo-

ſals

ſals offer'd me, but, without the leaſt heſitation, ſubſcrib'd to all their demands, and gave both the mother and daughter my hand, for the performance of the conditions ſtipulated. Then I gave the young milk maid to underſtand, that I would no longer ſuffer her to carry milk; and, that the better to colour our intrigue, ſhe ſhould keep a maid, and pretend ſhe had receiv'd a hurt in her ſhoulders. I told her farther, that ſhe might wear the ſame cloaths as ſhe did before; and that I only deſir'd ihe would be very naet in her linnen, with which I would take care to furniſh her. We agreed too, that as often as I had a mind to come and ſee her to give notice of it to my confident there preſent, to the end ſhe might take the neceſſary precautions, and contrive to ſend the maid out of the way. Theſe meaſures taken, I put my hand in my pocket, and pulling out ten ducats, gave them to the mother, whom I aſſur'd at the ſame time by my interpreter, that it was my deſire, ſhe would make much of herſelf therewith; recommending it to her to take care of my dear little wife, whom I held all this while by the hand, and fix'd a thouſand kiſſes on her lips, before we parted. By this time, I thought of returning home; and having taken my leave, deſired the maſter of the languages, as we were going back, not to fail

of

of going the next day, and giving his fair ſcholar her leſſon; and to do his utmoſt, to make her underſtand French in a ſhort time; aſſuring him, that if he would be whole days with her, he ſhould be well paid for his pains. As ſoon as we came into the city, we parted, and I return'd home, full of joy; and found my coffee-room crowded with gentlemen.

My principal care was, to keep this intrigue ſo ſecret, that Janine ſhould know nothing at all of the matter; for which purpoſe, I took my old road, with reſpect to her, and treated her with all poſſible ſweetneſs of temper. My buſineſs flouriſh'd daily more and more; ſo that ſcarcé a day paſs'd but I got, at leaſt, fifteen ducats. And thus was I in a condition, to act the generous part by my dear Chriſtina, whom I never failed of viſiting three or four times a week. We ſoon came to a good underſtanding of one another; ſo that having repeated to her, with my own mouth, the aſſurances given her by the maſter of languages, ſhe abandon'd herſelf entirely to me.

'Tis abſolutely impoſſible for me, courteous reader, to repreſent to thee all the charms which I found in that lovely object! Never did mortal ſee any thing ſo perfect and accompliſh'd! In a word, ſuch was my happineſs, that I eaſily loſt the memory

of

of all the Pleasures I had tasted before, which appear'd to be nothing compar'd with these I enjoy'd with my dear Christina the milk-maid! and I am verily persuaded, that were I permitted to describe all her most engaging charms, you that read my memoirs would envy me. Nevertheless, I assure you, in spite of all that felt the curse of envy, I continued in the peaceable enjoyment of that lovely person, for the space of fourteen months; which, far from taking off the edge of my love, did so inflame and augment my passion, daily, that I neglected all other business, to prove a faithful slave to Cupid, and his mother Christina. This rais'd such a jealousy in Janine's breast, that she resolv'd at last, to dodge me, and see whither I went. Nor did she wait long to satisfy her curiosity; for the very day after she had taken this resolution, I went to see Christina; and Janine, turning spy, saw me go into the milk maid's house. Tho' the jealous huzzy had too much respect for me, to follow me in, yet she was so mischievous, as to stay till I came out. While I was there with her whom I lov'd best, who should come in but the master of languages? who calling me aside, told me, he had seen Janine walking to and fro about forty yards from the house; and that, therefore, it was

high time to think of ſome method to keep her ignorant of the intrigue. At the name of Janine, all my ſenſes were put into ſuch diſorder, that my new wife perceiving it, ask'd me, whence ſuch a ſudden change proceeded? I told her the matter was not worth her hearing; for that it was only upon the maſter of languages telling me a piece of news, that a little vex'd me; to wit, that a man that ow'd me a great deal of money, diſappear'd. Mean time, I was oblig'd to take meaſures to leave that houſe, in which I was diſturb'd with a thouſand diſmal fears, and obſerv'd by the eyes of Janine, of whom I had then moſt reaſon to be afraid. For that end, I took the maſter of languages into one corner of the room, to conſult with him about what we had beſt to do, to take away from Janine all the fatal jealouſies ſhe might have conceiv'd. The reſult of our ſhort conference was, that we ſhould go out together; and that if Janine ſtill lay perdue, I ſhould pretend to be amaz'd to ſee her there; and that we ſhould ſay, that the houſe ſhe ſaw us come out of, was a walk I often took, for the ſake of the converſation of a certain Vertuoſo, who frequented that houſe, and in whoſe company I took ſo much pleaſure, that hours ſeem'd but as minutes, while I was with him. Moreover, that I was extremely ſorry, the gentleman was

not

not there to day; and the more, becauſe I did not know where he liv'd, ſo that I could not inform myſelf of the reaſons that hinder'd his coming. The project thus concerted, I took my leave of the dear milk-maid, and went out of the houſe, in company of her maſter. As ſoon as I caſt my eyes towards the city, I ſpy'd Janine, who no ſooner ſaw me come out of doors, but ſhe turn'd about, and made great haſte home. I was highly pleas'd with that fancy, by reaſon it gave me more time to think of what I had to ſay to her, and to defend myſelf againſt any ſurprize. It was not that I apprehended any miſchief on the part of Janine, over whom I had too much awe; but I was afraid my milk maid, to whom I had promis'd marriage, would find out, that I was a burgher of Utrecht, and that I had another perſon with me, who went for my wife. And that affair had been of dangerous conſequence to me, if it had been diſcover'd: Inſomuch that I was obliged to take all imaginable precautions to conceal my intrigue from Janine, who would have taken care to ſpread it, enough, had it once reached her ears.

When I and the maſter of languages parted, I aſſur'd him, that I would come to his lodgings the next day, and tell him how I came off with Janine.

Being come home, I found her making chocolate for some gentlemen; and going up to her——Was it not you, my dear, said I, smiling, that I saw without the gate of Amsterdam, about an hour ago? I am sure, if it was you, there is a person in this city very much like you.—It was I, sure enough, answer'd Janine, with a very serious air; for I had a mind to see, with my own eyes, whither you go every day, and to know the reason why you thus neglect the coffee room. I wish my suspicion be ill ground d, added she, si hing; but alas! how afraid am I, that to my sorrow, and your own too in the end) there is but too much occasion for it! — what are you bewitch'd? answer'd I, interrupting her, that you talk to me, in this manner? do you speak in earnest, when you rave thus? or, do you only do it, to divert yourself? if you speak seriously, I shall take a pleasure in mortifying your curiosity, and punishing your unjust suspicions, by carrying you to the place where you saw me, to let you know the reasons which induce me to go thither. Then I told her all that the master of languages and I had agreed upon; and as she seem'd to give credit to all that I said, I begun to talk with her about our domestick affairs, and after having supp'd very lovingly together, went to bed, where I pass'd the

the night with abundance of uneasiness; for I had no sooner fallen asleep, but I was tormented with frightful dreams. Among the rest, methought, my young milk-maid, having discover'd who I was, basely reproach'd me; and that with looks pale like death, eyes drown'd in tears, and all over trembling, she abandon'd herself to despair, and came rushing upon me, with a naked poniard in her hand, in order to make a thousand oilet holes in my skin. My soul was so troubled with that dismal thought, that as fast, as I was I cry'd out aloud, ah! dear Christina, what are you going to do? then I waked in a great fright; and tho' I knew it was but a dream, yet I pass'd the night very irksomely, being full of apprehensions, that it presaged some fatal adventure! the night was no sooner gone, but my mind having been extraordinarily fatigued with those illusions, I fell asleep at break of day, and did not wake till ten o'clock. As soon as I was got up and dress'd, I went down into the coffee room, and asking for Janine, the maid told me she was gone to market. I the more easily believ'd this, because it was market day; but she did not tell me, her mistress had been gone ever since seven of the clock in the morning. She came home again about eleven, and shew'd me all her bargains reproaching me for laziness, for

lying

lying abed ſo long, and not going along with her to market. Dinner-time being come, I eat very heartily, and not dreaming but Janine had entirely loſt her jealouſy, grew, once more impatient to ſee my charming milk-maid. No ſooner, therefore, had I dined, but I went out, and call'd upon the maſter of languages by the way; but I took the precaution to look behind me every now and then, to ſee if I was not watch'd. When I knock'd at his door, he deſir'd me to ſtay for him a little, which I did at the city-gate; and as ſoon as he came up with me, we went another way, than we were wont to walk. But is was then too late, to uſe precautions; the ſteed was ſtol'n, and it was to no purpoſe to ſhut the ſtable door. But, however, it was not long before we arriv'd at that little cottage, which was, before, the place in which I enjoy'd the moſt perfect bliſs.

Going directly in doors, and finding the mother of my lov'd object alone, I ask'd with ſome eagerneſs, where my dear Chriſtina was? ſhe is ſick abed, reply'd the old woman. She had ſcarce utter'd thoſe words, but ſitting down, ſhe let fall a ſhower of tears, and made the moſt ſenſible complaints that ever were heard. This ſomewhat ſtartled me; and I began to ſuſpect, then, that Janine had ſprung her mine, and been farther a field in the morning, than to mar-

ket

ket. Nor was it long before I was confirm'd in my conjecture with a witneſs! for the daughter hearing the complaints of her mother, and not knowing I was there, put on a night-gown which I had given her, and got out of bed, to comfort her mother. But how was ſhe confounded at the ſight of me! In a word, ſhe ſcream'd out, and fell into a fit in her mother's arms! her charming cheeks which before would have eclips'd the glories of the lillies and roſes, were immediately o'erſpread with a frightful paleneſs; and her whole body was like ice, and without any ſymptom of life! Jacomine, being frighted almoſt out of her wits, made diſmal moan, and would fain have gone out, and implored the aſſiſtance of ſome kind neighbours; but the maſter of languages and I kept her within, and taking the dear expirer in our arms, carry'd her back to her bed. Then having deſir'd the maſter of languages to comfort the old woman, I pull'd a little viol out of my pocket, where I always carry'd one, and pour'd a few drops of water into a little white wine, which, with much ado, I got down my milk maid's throat. Scarce had ſhe ſwallow'd 'em, but ſhe began to recover her ſpirits; whereupon, having rubb'd her temples and noſtrils with hungary water, till ſhe began to open her eyes, I got out of her ſight, for fear of throw-

ing

ing her into a relapſe. Then leaving the maſter of languages alone with the mother, I retired to a little room juſt by, and there ſat down in as deplorable a condition as that my poor miſtreſs was reduced to. I had not, however, been there long, before my friend came and told me, that the fair Chriſtina had entirely recovered her fitt, and deſired to ſpeak with me. I could not deny that lovely creature, tho' I went trembling, like a guilty malefactor before a ſevere judge. Wherefore, throwing myſelf upon my knees at her bedſide,——Thus proſtrate at your feet, my ador'd Chriſtina, ſays I, I lie, to hear the ſubject of your alarms; and if I am ſo miſerable, as to have been the cauſe of 'em, i'll invent ſuch a method of puniſhment for myſelf, as ſhall entirely convince you, that my will had not the leaſt ſhare in't. I am willing to believe, anſwer'd ſhe, that the blind paſſion you had for me, did not permit you to conſider the deplorable ſtate to which you were going to reduce me: But then, continued ſhe, could you make choice of none but a poor milk-maid, I would fain know, to allay your deviliſh heat? What will become of me, unfortunate wretch that I am! And ſince I can't be your wife, What will become of the fruit of your criminal amours! Alas! miſerable woman that I am! My loſs

loſs is irretrievable! my wound incurable! nor will all my tears and deſpair avail, to the taking away the ſtains of my ſully'd virtue? ungrateful man! thus to deceive me! but yes, you have deceiv'd me, and all my innocent and faithful love is to expect no better fate, than that of a dark gloomy deſpair, yes, I ſay, And if I were not in the condition I am in, I would before now have put a ſtop to the courſe of my unfortunate days! theſe ſtrokes ſtruck me to the quick, and penetrated even to my inmoſt ſoul! But I thought it was now high time to interrupt her, and prevent the return of a deadly ſwoon! ceaſe, my dear, ſays I, thus to kill me with your cruel complaints! Give me only the reſpite of a few moments, and leave to inform you, that you wrong me, in loading me with the crimes you have now laid to my charge! I have now laboured almoſt theſe three hours, under the moſt extreme grief, and have born all your accuſations, I know not why! tell me, therefore, at leaſt, I conjure you, what can be the ſubject of your uneaſineſs; and I doubt not, but you will afterwards acknowledge; that the evil is not yet ſo great, but that a remedy may be found for it.

Have not I all the reaſon in the world to be afflicted, ſaid ſhe, after what has been told me this morning? A woman that I know very well as having formerly ſerv'd

her with milk, and who keeps a coffee-houſe, came hither, this morning, and deſir'd to ſpeak with the woman of the houſe. My mother and I deſir'd her to walk in, and ſit down, and ask'd her whether we could do her any ſervice. But as ſhe can hardly expreſs her meaning in Dutch, I told her, that if ſhe pleaſed to ſpeak in French, I ſhould uuderſtand her much better. Thereupon, ſhe told me, that the occaſion of her coming was, to inform herſelf, whether we knew ſignor Rozelli, that kept the Italian coffee-houſe in ſuch a place? for that ſhe had ſeen him come into the houſe yeſterday, in company with another man; and that he ſtaid here above three hours. I know not, replyed I to the gentlewoman, whether he that came hither yeſterday, keeps a coffee-houſe, or not; but I would fain know, what Intereſt you have in the matter, and why you ask ſo many queſtions? I think, anſwered ſhe, that I may inform myſelf of the places my husband frequents, in order to diſcover the reaſons that engage him to neglect his buſineſs at the rate he does. How ſaid I! very much ſurpriſed; is the man you ſpeak of, your husband? why! it perfectly amazes me! for as often as he has come hither, with the man with whom you ſaw him yeſterday, he never told me, he was marry'd? Thereupon, ſhe put ſeveral queſ-

tions

tions to me, about the buſineſs of your coming hither, and what you had to do here? To which I anſwer'd her, that I knew no otherwiſe, than that you deſir'd my mother to let you come to her houſe, with a friend of yours, to manage ſome private affairs that were between you? But that would not do; for as I could no longer conceal my ſhame and guilt, ſhe eaſily perceiv'd it, and told me plainly, ſhe ſaw but too well, that it was quite upon another account, than what I had told her, that you came ſo often hither; and that ſhe knew a method whereby to make me repent my boldneſs. Thereupon, ſhe roſe like lightning from her ſeat, and went out of the houſe raving like a fury. For my part, I remain'd ſpeechleſs and trembling for ſome time, ſo that I had ſcarce the power to tell my poor mother what I had heard. Since that, my grief is ſo augmented, that being no longer able to ſtand, I was obliged to go to bed, and was talking of my misfortunes to my mother, when you came in. And is not this, think ye, matter of ſorrow enough for me? and have I not too much reaſon to complain? concluded the fair Chriſtina.——Yes doubtleſs, my dear, you have too much, anſwer'd I; but nevertheleſs, don't alarm yourſelf with all that unhappy woman might have told you. But the better to perſuade you,

tinued I, that you have nothing to fear on that ſide, i'll give you a faithful account, how affairs ſtand between that impertinent buſy body and me. Thereupon, I told the afflicted milk-maid (who in that languiſhing condition, appear'd to be more beautiful than ever) all that related to Janine, ever ſince my taking her from ſervice; adding, that indeed ſhe had told truth, in ſaying I kept a coffee-houſe; but that it was not out of a principal of neceſſity, but of policy, and for very important reaſons, the ſecret whereof I would communicate to her. I aſſur'd her farther, that I had not made a fool of her; that my love was ſincere and of an unparallel'd violence; that nothing in the world ſhould put by the reſolution I had taken to love her as long as I liv'd; that as for Janine's part, where it not for making a noiſe, I'd take a ſevere method to puniſh her impudence, and from that very day make her ſerve me as my woman; but that my intereſts not permitting me ſo to do, we muſt e'en take meaſures to ſecure her againſt the inſults of that mad-woman. Pluck up a good heart, then, my dear Chriſtina, ſaid I; and abandon your melancholy from this very moment. If 'tis true, that you lov'd me, and that you have ſtill the ſame ſentiments for me, as I have for you, never fear, but in a little time, I'll complete your happineſs.

pineſs. I follow'd thoſe words with a river of tears, with which I bath'd her pretty hands, holding 'em in mine, and kiſſing 'em every moment. Thus ſhe made no difficulty of believing my ſincerity; upon which, joy ſat, once more, on her charming looks. I took that opportunity to make her receive ſome nouriſhment; for ſhe had neither eat nor drank that whole day; and as night drew on, I told her, I muſt return home, to diſpoſe all things that might contribute to our repoſe.——What, will you leave me, then, ſaid ſhe, with tears in her eyes, and ſqueezing my hand, juſt when I find myſelf very ill, and am about to bring the fruit of your love into the world?——— I don't believe, that will happen yet a-while, anſwered I; but, however, to ſatisfy you as to that point, I'll deſire the maſter of languages to tarry here all night, and recommend it to him to take care of a midwife.——I am content, ſaid ſhe, provided you promiſe to come hither again to morrow morning, as ſoon as the gates are open'd, for I am ſadly afraid I ſhall die, without the pleaſure of ſeeing you again: And if that fatal hour be come, heaven grant, at leaſt, that I may not end my days, without giving you, with my embraces, the laſt tokens of my affection and tenderneſs! —Baniſh, I conjure you, my dear, I reply'd, all

ſuch

ſuch vain alarms! and entertain not fearful thoughts, at a ſeaſon when you need not! Rather take care to recover from the trouble that has agitated you all day; and endeavour to reſt well to-night, in full perſuaſion, that I'll ſee you again to-morrow morning by day-break. 'Tis now time for me to return home, and for the maſter of languages to go and fetch the midwife. Let me therefore, ſore againſt my will, bid you good-night! adieu, till to morrow!— Thus having parted from my charming milk-maid, I ordered all that had paſs'd to be told to the mother; and ſo went out with the maſter of languages, deſiring him to find out a diſcreet midwife, and conduct her immediately to my miſtreſs's, and not leave her, till I came again.

Being arriv'd at home, I went into my chamber by a private door, becauſe none of the company in my coffee-room ſhould perceive my concern. The firſt thing I did, was, to ſend for Janine, who had no ſooner enter'd my chamber, but I ſhut the door, and thus addreſs'd myſelf to her, 'Have you forgot Janine, who you are, and who I am? And do you thus abuſe the kindneſs I have ever had for you? Ungrateful wretch! Is this the reſpect you ought to have for your maſter? D'ye think I am ignorant of your hot-headed temerity, in prying

prying into my actions, and beating up my quarters? You have had the impudence to abuſe a perſon whom I honour and eſteem for the ſake of the man who is her husband! You have, by your unaccountable doings, broken the meaſures I had taken, about an affair of the laſt importance, to make it known, that I am a learned eccleſiaſtick of the church of Rome; and that for particular reaſons! Go! dread my anger! and know, that I'll never forgive the trick you have play'd me, as long as I live! And if ever, hereafter, you offer to ſtir a ſtep, out of the houſe, without my conſent, you may aſſure yourſelf, you ſhall never enter it again! I ſpoke this with an air that made ſuch an impreſſion upon the mind of Janine, that ſhe threw herſelf at my feet, and embracing my knees, ask'd my pardon a thouſand times, and proteſted, ſhe would, by no means riſe, till I had promis'd to forgive her the crime ſhe had raſhly committed, and that I would never abandon her. I was ſo touch'd with that ſubmiſſion that I immediately took her off her knees, and embracing her, told her once for all, that I entirely left the management of the houſe and coffee-room to her; but that as for my private affairs, I deſir'd her never to intermeddle, nor trouble her head about 'em, except I had a mind ſhe ſhould

Thus

Thus having made up the breach between me and Janine, and thereby render'd myſelf abſolute maſter over her, I ordered the maid to lay the cloth, and bring ſupper in. Having eaten very heartily, we went to bed, where I made uſe of abundance of tender and obliging expreſſions, to recover Janine entirely from her jealous fit. At laſt I told her, before I went to ſleep, that I muſt get up very early the next morning, in order, if poſſible to put an end to the diſorders which ſhe had occaſion'd. I ſlept very well all night, and waking about day-break, made haſte to dreſs myſelf, and run to the gate, to the end I might be as good as my word, and be there before it was open'd. I juſt nick'd the time; but ſcarce had I got out of the city, but I met the maſter of languages coming to me, with ſuch a melancholy air, that I could not doubt, but ſome ſad accident had happen'd. Nor was I out in my conjecture; for as ſoon as he came up to me, he told me, that poor Chriſtina was brought to bed, about three in the morning, of a boy, which died ſoon after; and that the midwife ſaid, the mother was in great danger. I leave the reader to judge how that piece of news affected me. I went into the houſe half dead, and approaching her bed-ſide, all over trembling. —— I am here, my dear Chriſtina, ſaid I, take

Take courage, my lovely rogue; and lay not your loſs too much to heart! I am as ſenſible of it as you; and therefore, we ought to comfort one another! come I hope we ſhall be happy for the future, at preſent we muſt take care to get you well again; for your health is the greateſt jewel I have in the world. Afterwards I told her, that ſhe had nothing to fear on the part of the perſon who was there the day before, and whom I had taken care to keep in order. Then I told her all that had paſs'd between me and Janine. Whereupon ſhe ſeemed to be very well ſatisfied, and reaching out her hand, and fixing her ghaſtly eyes upon me,——I am glad, my dear, ſaid ſhe, to ſee you here, Now I am not afraid of death, let it come when it will! let it diſplay all its terrors, I will yet receive it with an eaſy, pleaſant look! on the other ſide, her mother ſqueezing me by the hands, though ſhe could not make me underſtand her, yet convinced me by her looks, of her profound grief, which diſſolv'd her all in tears! in a word, that chamber, at other times the place of my delight, was turn'd into the manſion of the deepeſt ſorrow. Mean time, I found myſelf under an indiſpenſable obligation to take courage; for I ſaw very plainly, that if I had given the reins to my grief, (which to prevent, requir'd all my philoſophy) all

would be loſt.——Wherefore, I deſired the maſter of languages to take away the mother, and endeavour to comfore her, and bid the midwife get every thing ready, that was requiſite in child-bed; and no ſooner was I alone with her, but I thus beſpoke her.

I know, very well, my dear, that you have all the reaſon in the world to be as much afflicted, as you appear to be to me; and that the loſs you have, this night ſuſtain'd, is none of the moſt ſupportable. I know too, that you are very ill, and that you will be worſe, if you don't moderate your grief. For this reaſon, baniſh I conjure you, all manner of ſorrow from your mind, and add not to the affliction of the miſerable man, whoſe life would be a burden to him, if he muſt ſpend it without you! hitherto I have done what I can in oppoſition to the diſmal thought that crowd in upon me, that I might be in a condition to relieve you now that you have ſo great need of conſolation; but I muſt confeſs, if you don't let me know, that you have yet a mind to live, you will ſoon ſee me ſink under the too heavy weight of my miſeries!——Well, let us live, ſaid ſhe, with a reſolute air; ſince it may hinder your death? for that's the only reaſon I have to deſire life! I conform entirely to your will; and aſſure you, that for my part, I will neglect nothing that may tend to my recovery,

recovery: This ſaid I kiſs'd her hands a hundred times, and thanked her for the care ſhe took of me; then I called the midwife, and ordered her to give my dear milk woman the things which ſhe had provided for her. After which having deſired her to compoſe herſelf to reſt.——That's what I very much want, ſaid ſhe; but 'tis impoſſible for me to ſleep a wink, unleſs you promiſe to ſit by me all the while? Yes, My Dear, anſwer'd I, I'll do that with all my ſoul; and for that purpoſe, I will go and write a little note, and ſend it home, to let them know that I ſhall not dine there to-day. I wrote my letter, accordingly, and gave it to my confident, deſiring him to ſee for ſome boy in the city, to carry it to my houſe. I alſo recommended it to him, to follow the boy, and ſee that he deliver'd it. I had before deſir'd the mother, to get the dinner ready againſt the maſter of languages came back, in order to eat as ſoon as Chriſtina was awaked. Then I went into the chamber again, and ſitting down in one corner of the room, juſt by the milk woman's Bed-ſide, Here am I, My Dear, ſaid I; try to go to ſleep; for I will bear you company. Nor was it long before ſhe did ſo, and reſted very quietly for the ſpace of three hours. When ſhe waked, I found ſhe was much better, and very eaſy, which fill'd her mo-

ther with joy. The master of languages return'd just at that very instant; upon which the cloth was laid, and we went to dinner. My dear Christina said she had some appetite, and eat the wing of a chicken (which I help'd her to) very heartily. I spent the rest of the afternoon in giving the necessary orders, as well concerning the dead child, as for the recovery of my dear lying-in woman; and we agreed, that the master of languages should lie there every night, till she was perfectly well recover'd. All things being adjusted, and perceiving, that the young milk woman was much better, I took my leave of her in very obliging expressions, and return'd home, where Janine receiv'd me cold enough. However, as I told her, the day before, upon what foot I would have her live with me, I did not put myself to any great pain, upon that score.

The next day, as soon as I had given the necessary orders in my coffee-room, I went to see Christina, whom I found much better than she had been the day before. Her mother on the contrary, was confined to her bed by an ague; though when I saw her before, there was no likelihood of her being sick. I did all that I could to keep this secret from my dear milk-woman; because I knew it was enough to have kill'd her: We told her indeed that her mother was a little indispos'd

indispos'd; but that there was the least danger. Nevertheless, three days after, about seven in the evening, the good old woman paid nature's irremissible debt, and gave up the ghost; but I took such measures, that the daughter knew nothing of the matter, till about a week after her mother was bury'd. And when we could conceal it no longer, my confident and I so well concerted measures, that when we told her the dismal news, we found means to comfort her.

As soon as the charming Christina was happily got up again, I persuaded her to sell her four cows and what goods she had, and to remove into the city. For this purpose, I left it to the master of languages to find out convenient lodgings in a place where my intrigue would be likely to succeed without any disturbance. As soon as he had done this, I furnish'd my dear peasant with cloaths and scarff's A-la-mode; and desir'd my confident ro conduct her, in that equipage, to her lodgings, whither she was follow'd by several porters with chests and trunks, as if she was just arriv'd from Amsterdam. I likewise help'd her to a French maid. Thus situated, we agreed about her maintenance; and scarce a day pass'd, but I went to see her; which cost the unhappy, disconsolate Janine, many a sigh and tear! But I had afterwards my share

ſhare of grief, in my turn! For about ſix weeks after I had taken this care of my charming milk-woman, going, one day to ſee this lady of the new edition, I found nothing at home; but having knock'd at the Door, a woman in the neighbourhood brought me the key, and told me, that the gentlewoman had given it her the day before, in the afternoon, and deſir'd her to deliver it into my own hands. Tho' I was like one thunder-ſtruck, at that news; yet I had too much government of myſelf, to fall under it: Wherefore, I open'd the door, and went into the chamber; where I fouud the neſt, but the bird was flown. However, caſting, by chance, my eyes upon the table, I ſaw a letter directed to me, which entirely convinced me of the fair Chriſtina's eſcape. Having open'd it, I read as follows:

LETTER.

'TOO long, perfidious wretch! too 'long have you abus'd my plainneſs 'and innocency! I have, at laſt! diſcover'd 'what you ſo ſtudiouſly endeavour'd to con-'ceal from me! But this, alas! to my ſor-'row! ofter it had coſt my poor mother her 'liſe! your own ſon his! and ſcarce ſuffer'd 'me to eſcape with mine! And is it, then

'at

'at this price, vile man! that thou pur-
'chaſeſt thy filthy, criminal pleaſures! Go,
'cruel parracide! and carry with thee, for
'ever, the poinant thought! of having
'baſely betray'd the unfortunate Chriſtina!
'For my part, i'll leave this deteſtable
'abode! and hide myſelf from the ſight of
'all the world! And, that I may the ſooner
'efface thy perfidiouſneſs from my remem-
'brance, I leave it to heaven's juſtice, to
'puniſh thee according to thy deſerts! But
'this, for thy tranquillity, I wi'h that
'thou may'ſt forget me, with the ſame
'eaſe, with which I leave thee! adieu.

All that read theſe memoirs, will eaſily imagine to what a pitch of madneſs, or rather, to what a depth of deſpair, this letter drove me! While I was agitated with a thouſand diſmal apprehenſions and revolv'd in my mind, the moſt tragical thoughts, I heard ſomebody knock at the door, and did not, in the leaſt doubt, but my cruel miſtreſs, touch'd with remorſe, was come to beg pardon for the injury ſhe had done me! I flew therefore, to the window; but alas, how far was I out in my conjecture! Twas the maſter of languages, to whom I threw the key, to let him in. As ſoon as he entered the chamber,——Ah! dear friend, cry'd I, D'ye bring me any news from your ſcholar?

ſcholar? The poor man was ſtruck all in a heap, and reply'd, that he knew not what I meant. Well, I am ruin'd, then, cry'd I again; Chriſtina is no longer mine! but has abandon'd me in good earneſt, and left me pitileſs, a prey to my deſpair. Was it thus, cruel woman, that you muſt deal by a man who has given you ſo many repeated marks of the moſt ſincere and violent paſſion? Is this all the reſpect I deſerv'd at your hands?——And thus, I was ſo overwhelm'd with grief, that I had certainly done myſelf ſome miſchief, had not the maſter of languages us'd his utmoſt efforts to hinder me, (for which I now think myſelf beholden to him: and am glad I was not ſuch a fool) by producing very ſtrong a guments to allay my furious tranſports! In a word, when I bad duly conſider'd the injurious letter ſhe had written to me, I plainly perceiv'd, and was oblig'd to agree with the maſter of languages, that it was a ſtratagem which ſhe made uſe of, or rather a German quarrel with me, the better to diſguiſe an intrigue which ſhe had probably enter'd into with ſome ſtudent of quality; and that to be more at leiſure to purſue that new conqueſt, ſhe had thought fit to run away from me. Theſe conjectures ſeem'd to be very well grounded; by reaſon, in rummaging a few old cloaths which ſhe had left behind her

her, I found two pair of mens ſhoes, and ſeveral love-letters, which I ſuppoſe ſhe had dropt by chance. One of theſe amourets ran in the following ters:

LETTER.

HOW long! dear angel, will you make me languiſh for the ſake of a few trifling reflections, that you force upon your own mind! What can you have of dangerous, while with me! Every thing is ready for our voyage! and your conſent given, we ſet out to morrow after dinner! I will be with you by and by at the uſual hour! do not fail to let your maid be at the door, to give me notice, if old Rout be there! In the name of Jove, My Dear, let us not delay the execution of our project for one moment! for I can no longer ſubſiſt under the intolerable grief of conſidering myſelf only as a Partner of a good which compoſes all my happineſs! think of me, therefore, my dear angel! who, in expectation of the pleaſure of embracing you without uneaſineſs, remains wholly yours! Adieu!

There needed no more to make me forget that wicked creature. Thus I recovered my former tranquility, and reſolved to go home directly, and make up the matter in good earneſt, with my faithful Janine. Having

made a present to the master of languages, of what remained in the house, (which amounted to the value of about twenty ducats) and paid him very genteelly besides; I returned him thanks for his good offices, and assured him, that I would call and see him now and then. And thus ended that intrigue; after having cost me abundance of trouble, and above 200 pistoles; and I thought myself happy in making such a come off, too.

When I arrived at home, I appeared much better humoured to Janine, than I used; and began to be more constant in my coffee-room; which soon convinced Janine, that some change had happened to her advantage; and I have since heard, that she gave two pistoles to the poor, as an acknowledgment, she said, of the favour it had pleased God to bestow upon her. And now, I had, no doubt, continued in this state all my life, had it not been for the acquaintance of a degraded monk, who was every day in my coffee-room; and who, as I soon found, by his discourse, was no enemy to the fair sex. He would often be at me to come and see him, which I could not, at last, refuse; and so engaged deep enough in his company, to draw myself into a dangerous affair. In a word, it was, in a short time, betwixt him and me, just as it had been between me and the

the Abbot Borri at Paris. Nay, though I had taken a resolution never to make use of the Talisman again; and though I was now situated in a country where those kind of things are very little regarded; yet I found, they served my turn as well there as in France. But as, by the advice of that villain, I was amused with the possession of the ladies of the first quality in the city, and the husband of one of those ladies had scented somewhat of my design, I was told, one fine morning, that if I did not speedily remove from Utrecht, I should be in danger of my life; for that my ruin was conspired, and all the measures taken to assassinate me. I then began to make some reflections on my late folly, and cursed, a thousand times over the getting acquainted with that debauched monk. Nevertheless, as this matter concerned my life, I considered also, that no time must be lost. I loaded myself immediately with all my most valuable effects; and, without taking the least notice of what I had hear, told Janine only, that I would go, that evening to Amsterdam, as well to buy some things which I wanted, as to speak with a person who was arrived there, for fear he should be gone, before I came. This said, I wrapped myself up in my cloak, and after having turned thro' all the by streets

in my way, went on board a bark, which set out the very moment.

Arriving at Amsterdam the next morning, I landed, and went to an Inn, to rest myself till change time, because I had not slept a wink all night, which I spent in contriving methods to extricate myself out of these new troubles. Having, therefore, slept for three or four hours, I got up and as soon as I was dress'd, went to the exchange, with design to strike an acquaintance with some of the Italians, and to see if it were possible for me to settle in that famous city. As I was a new face in that assembly, and affected to walk with a particular air of gravity, I was taken for some eminent merchant; and immediately a crowd of Italians came about me; some to offer me their service, and others out of curiosity, to know who I was. I got rid of all those gentlemen as handsomly as I could, except one whom I thought fit for my turn. As soon as I found myself at liberty, I assured him, that being a stranger at Amsterdam, I used the freedom to desire him, if it were not too much trouble for him to direct me to an inn, where I might be well entertain'd. He did it very willingly, and conducted me to an Inn, where I pray'd him to walk in with me; and having a desire to discourse with him in private, I order'd the Inn-keeper to lay us a table-

table-cloth in ſome back chamber. While we were at dinner, I communicated to the gentleman my deſign of ſettling in Amſterdam. Nor could I ever have met with a man more proper to ſecond me in that affair, than my unknown friend. For that very day, he help'd me to a houſe, behind the Heere Lodgement, as convenient as could be for the execution of my project. I took it at firſt ſight, and then ſent word to Janine, that I deſign'd to fix my abode, at Amſterdam: Wherefore, I ordered her to pack up all my goods, and come to me as ſoon as ſhe could; for that I could not return to Utrecht, for reaſons that I would declare to her, as ſoon as ſhe was come. And in few weeks after this, after having open'd a coffee-houſe in the famous city of Amſterdam, my beginning was ſo proſperous, that I might reaſonably expect the end would be anſwerable to my purpoſe. I took abundance of pains to riggle myſelf into the acquaintance of meſſieurs R——, C——, and B———, eminent bankers there, and perſons of diſtinguiſh'd merit, and ſingular probity, and good-manners; and beſides this, they were Italians by birth. I ſucceeded ſo well in my deſign, and inſinuated myſelf ſo far into their favour, that thoſe gentlemen profeſs'd a great friendſhip for me, and would often tell me, they could not but

but be ſorry to ſee a perſon of my merit forced to ſell coffee; and therefore, that if I would take their advice, I ſhould make up matters with the court of Rome, and renounce a profeſſion ſo unworthy my character. They aſſur'd me farther, that if I would leave the affair entirely to them, they would do their utmoſt to obtain a Bull of the Pope, to reſtore me to my employs, and to make a general amneſty for all that had paſs'd. They repeated this to me ſo often, and alledg'd ſuch plauſible reaſons, that I begun to yield to their opinion, and make ſerious reflections upon what they told me. In a word, thoſe gentlemen did, at laſt, ſo far prevail with me, that I gave 'em my word, that, provided they obtain'd from Rome what they had engag'd to do, I would, in every thing, conform myſelf to their will and deſire. It is impoſſible to expreſs to my readers, the joy and ſatisfaction which thoſe gentlemen teſtify'd upon my making that declaration to 'em: Having embrac'd me, they aſſur'd me of their protection, and offer'd me their money, their protection, and their perſons. They were never ſatisfy'd but when I was in their company, ſometimes at one's houſe, and ſometimes at another's. On the other hand, I endeavour'd to merit their eſteem, by diſcourſing, in my converſation with them,

upon

upon the moſt ſublime ſubjects. Nor were they wanting, in writing, on my behalf, as well to Rome, as to other cities of Italy, where they had correſpondents, in order to to obtain the moſt difficult thing in the world.

For my part, I was not altogether idle at this juncture; for tho' I did not depend much upon the ſucceſs of thoſe gentlemen, yet I could not but flatter myſelf a little with the hopes on't. For this reaſon, I began to ſet about a piece of work in good earneſt, which I had often thought of before; and that was, a book, entitled, "Truth's "Looking-glaſs for the Church of Rome". My application to this ſtudy was ſo great, that I entirely neg'ected the buſine's of the houſe for it, leaving the ſole management thereof to Janine; for I was too much taken up with the Ideas I had form'd to myſelf, and which I was revolving, night and day, in my brain. I already look'd upon the purple as my own, provided my reconciliation with the court of Rome took a happy turn; and thoſe gentlemen frequently renew'd my hopes, by ſhewing me the letters which they receiv'd from Italy. Theſe too quicken'd my diligence to make an end of my book.

I think, I may ſay, without Vanity, that that work contain'd the moſt demonſtrative argu-

arguments in defence of the court of Rome, that ever appear'd in the world. And I hope, all ſuch as have read it, will do me juſtice and acknowledge, that nothing can be better written. I did not put it to the preſs, for reaſons which the reader will be inform'd of in the remainder of my unfortunate adventures.

Some little time after, thoſe gentlemen having received freſh letters from Rome, in a much more clear and poſitive ſtyle than the former. I judg'd it high time to communicate to Janine the affair that had been negociated in my behalf, and the reſolution I had taken to accept of it, to the end I might know what ſhe would agree to, whether to continue in the coffee-houſe, or to lead a recluſe life. One day, therefore, I took her aſide, and told her, in the firſt place, the reaſons that obliged me to reconcile myſelf with the court of Rome. Afterwards, I promis'd, that I never would forget her; and, that if ſhe would reſolve to embrace the Romiſh religion, I would get her into a convent; and perhaps, by the intereſt I hoped to make in Rome, obtain for her the intire direction of the nunnery ſhe ſhould be in. Conſider, therefore, concluded I, what you had beſt do, and be ſpeedy in your reſolutions; for as for me, I am already determined, and things

are

are so far advanced, that I cannot flinch back without incurring the indignation of persons of the greatest merit, and exposing myself to the censure of all the world.——How, answered Jinne, would you shew yourself so void of sense, as to trust again to the malice of the priests? have you so soon forgot the mortal troubles their craft has often drawn you into? and have you no more regard to what you have already suffered, for being too credulous of their fallacious promises? no, my dear, continued she; God defend us from such a sad misfortune! His divine providence has e'er now favour'd me, in snatching you out of the paws and wesand of the lion; and I hope, it will now make me an instrument, to hinder you from running into his mouth again: at least, I'd die a thousand times over, before I'd suffer you to commit such a fault. Are you so blind as not to see the snares that are laid for you, by those who would sacrifice you to their merciless rage? there is not now another Christina, nor ——, to open the door of that gloomy dungeon. No; there's now no person in the world, but myself, that can and will concern themselves for your life! Renounce, therefore your rash and fatal resolution, and acknowledge the favour heaven has been pleas'd to bestow on you, in bringing you into a country of liberty,

where you are ſhelter'd from the perſecutions of all your enemies. Spend the reſt of your life, in eaſe, in your own buſineſs; and as for the cares and fatigue it requires, leave thoſe entirely to your faithful Janine; while you paſs your time as agreeably as you can, and divert yourſelf with your real and ſincere friends.

Theſe words which I perceiv'd to flow from the bottom of Janine's heart, made ſuch an impreſſion upon my alarm'd ſoul, that I loſt, at once, all the thoughts inſpir'd by the gentlemen before mention'd; and reſolv'd, maugre all they could ſay to me, to follow Janine's counſel. I could not, however, let 'em know my mind, till the laſt reſolution of the court of Rome was arriv'd; for if they had not met with ſucceſs in their undertaking, my excuſe had been ready made, without putting me to the trouble of telling 'em how my mind was alter'd. But I had not ſuch good fortune; for about ten days after, they receiv'd a letter, in which all my demands were granted, and all I could wiſh, agreed to. Immediately, they came all three to my houſe, to communicate to me that important piece of news; but were extremely ſurpriz'd, when, inſtead of ſhewing myſelf glad of it, I ſaid as follows.

I am ſenſible, gentlemen, of the honour you

you have done me, and the pains you have taken upon my account: I am perſuaded, that you have acted like ſincere, honeſt men; and that it was out of pure zeal for religion, that you concern'd yourſelves in this grand affair: But I very much doubt, whether your correſpondents at Rome act with the like ſincerity; becauſe I have juſt receiv'd a letter from an intimate friend of mine there, adviſing me, if I value my life, not only not to return to Rome, upon any account, but even not to come near any catholick country. He adds, that it was already reported among ſeveral perſons of the firſt rank, that I was ſhortly expected there, and that my indictment was actually drawn up. Thereupon, I ſhew'd 'em the letter, which I had forg'd myſelf, as ſoon as I underſtood, that the Pope's Bulls were come. Thus you ſee, gentlemen, continued I, to what evident dangers I ſhould expoſe myſelf, if I ſhould take your advice; and therefore I deſire you'd let me recall my word, ſince I am, by no means, in a humour to run ſuch a riſque; and permit me to return you my moſt humble thanks for your good-will.——And d'ye think to come off ſo, then? ſays monſieur S——, in the Name of them all; and to put us by with an old woman's ſtory? D'ye pretend thus to ſlight all the ſprings we have

ſet to work, and all the expences we have been at, to compaſs this important affair? No, no, ſignor Rozelli, this is not the way to deal with perſons of diſtinction, who have been at ſuch trouble upon your ſcore. Shew yourſelf a man, and not a woman. Every ſtep that we have taken in this affair, has been with your conſent; and if you are no otherwiſe hinder'd, than by the apprehenſion of loſing your life, baniſh, for ſhame, that panic fear. We three will engage for you, and remain as hoſtages to their high-mightineſſes, to anſwer, in our own name, for any the leaſt injury that ſhall be done you.—I perceiv'd by this, that I was taken, and had not a word to ſay for myſelf; ſo that I had, doubtleſs, renew'd my promiſe to thoſe gentlemen, had not Janine, who liſten'd at the door, hinder'd me, by ruſhing into the room, and making a dreadful hurricane, calling the gentlemen Seducers, and threatening to have them before the magiſtrates, for endeavouring to betray me into the hands of the Pope. I muſt needs ſay, it very much troubled me to ſee perſons of probity treated in that manner; and the more, becauſe I was perſuaded of their candour and ſincerity in the proceeding: But it was not in my power to ſet bounds to Janine's dreadful paſſion; and ſo, meſſieurs S——, B——, and G——, went away

abuſing

abuſing me, and threatning they would make me repent the uſage I had given them.

As ſoon as I found myſelf alone with Janine, I reprimanded her for her rudeneſs towards thoſe gentlemen, alledging, that I could have clear'd myſelf genteely enough, without coming to ſuch extremities; that however, I forgave her, becauſe I was ſenſible, what ſhe had done, proceeded from a principle of friendſhip to me; but deſired her withal, to keep her temper a little better for the future, leſt ſhe ſhould have occaſion to repent her raſhneſs. But this did not, in the leaſt, baulk her. On the contrary, ſhe perſiſted to tell me, that ſhe would uſe every body ſo, that came to ſpeak about that affair; repeating again and again, the aſſurances ſhe had before given me, that ſhe'd rather die a thouſand times, than ſee the accompliſhment of ſuch a pernicious deſign. Thus perceiving, that I muſt no longer think of returning to Rome, I entirely laid aſide that deſign, and reſolved to ſpeak no more about it, but apply myſelf altogether to the buſineſs of my coffee-houſe, which promis'd very fair. You may imagine, therefore, how ſurpriz'd and griev'd I was, about a fortnight or three weeks after, to find, that all my cuſtomers had forſaken me, aad that nobody came to my

coffee-

coffee-houſe; that wherever I went, people look'd askew on me; and, that thoſe who us'd to be my greateſt companions, pretend not to know me. It was not very hard for me to guess from what ſide that blow came; for I knew very well, that it was the effect of thoſe gentlemens menaces at taking their leave of me; and that they began to ſhew their revenge by ruining my credit, and aſperſing me to the inhabitants of Amſterdam. But as one misfortune ſeldom comes alone; I had likewiſe the misfortune to ſee Janine taken very ill, all of a ſudden. And within a few days after ſhe had been ſeiz'd with a fever, an accident befel her, which modeſty obliges me to paſs by in ſilence. Suffice it, to aſſure my readers, that ever ſince that unlucky diſgrace, ſhe has ceas'd to be a woman, and from that time, we have liv'd together like brother and ſiſter. Mean while, no ſooner had the fever left her, but the infirmity ſhe was troubled with, not hindering her from walking, ſhe continued to mind the buſineſs of the houſe: But as I found, that it grew downwards, and daily declined, I took the reſolution, by Janine's advice, to let lodgings; thinking 'twas my intereſt to draw foreigners to my houſe, ſince it was forſaken by the citizens. Having fix'd a bill over mydoor, accordingly, I us'd all my skill

to

to lure ſtrangers to my houſe; and for that purpoſe, would often go to the keys, to ſee whether any body landed or not. That not anſwering my expectation, I employ'd men on purpoſe to direct new comers to my houſe. For, as Amſterdam is the place of greateſt trade in Holland, if not in Europe, people are continually landing there from ſome part of the world or other. And thus, I thought to retrieve my affairs by means of the foreigners. And indeed, at firſt, I thought my deſign would have ſucceeded perfectly well. For, as ſome of thoſe ſtrangers tarry'd there ſome time, I thought, that if I ſhould diet them, it would ſecure to me a better trade, and a more conſiderable and certain profit. Wherefore, I and Janine agreed to ſet up an ordinary; not ſuch, however, as you have at inns, but like thoſe who keep boarders. The neatneſs with which I entertained ſuch as took their meals at my houſe, ſoon brought a great trade to it; inſomuch that I flatter'd myſelf with getting a great deal of money by that buſineſs, in which I took a particular pleaſure. My life ſlid away very agreeably; and I fancy'd, that nothing could now interrupt the courſe of my proſperity. Nevertheleſs, this happineſs was very ſhort-liv'd. Thoſe very enemies, who had already render'd me ſeveral back ſervices, ſtuck cloſe to me, and

not

not content with ruining my present business, continu'd their hatred against me, aud never fail'd to do me a mischief, as often as they had opportunity, tho' I had never directly affronted them. However, they thought, I had dealt very basely by them, in disappointing their hopes of reconciling me to the Romish religion, which they had boasted, as very meritorious, among those of the same communion. In a word, their great reputation was the ruin of mine; and I saw, for the second time, my house deserted and empty; so that I could no longer doubt, but my enemies had conspir'd my ruin; for the Italians set no bounds to their malice; and especially, when religion is the pretence. Seeing, therefore, that it was impossible I should succeed in a city where I was become an eye-sore, I resolv'd to go and live somewhere else. Of all the places in Holland, I thought the inhabitants of the Hague enjoy'd the best air, as well upon account of its excellent climate, as because I flatter'd myself, I should there meet with the repose I had in vain sought for in all the other places of the world, wherever I had been. Accordingly, I form'd the design of settling there; but before I sent my effects away, I dispatch'd Janice to get intelligence, and to hire a house, that was conveniently situated for my business; but

but this, without ſpeaking of it to any perſon except Janine herſelf.

As I had nothing at all to do, while this matter was in agitation, and Janine hurry'd from Amſterdam to the Hague, and back again from the Hague to Amſterdam, I took a turn in the city. It happen'd, one day, as I was thus walking, that I went thro' a ſtreet which was full of thoſe delightful places, call'd muſick houſes, and which, as I was afterwards given to underſtand, was the rendezvous for all the proſtitutes in the city. I was croſſing that fine ſtreet, when a very pretty Woman met me, and tipp'd me the wink to come to her. I had the curioſity to go to her; and as ſhe ſpoke French very well, was eaſily perſuaded to enter, with her, the houſe at whoſe door ſhe was ſtanding. I found it was one of thoſe places of pleaſure call'd a Muſick-houſe. As it was almoſt night, I heard, in a very little time, a conſort of organs, violins, and baſe-viols, in the hall where my miſtreſs conducted me, which was ſo illuminated, that far from thinking I was in a place of liberty, I began to fancy myſelf at Rome again, in one of the catholick churches. Among abundance of damſels, who were preſent in that illuſtrious rendezvous, I found none ſo charming as her that had introduc'd me. She was, indeed, full of wit, and very en-

gaging in her discourse. She gave me a brief history of her genealogy, assuring me, that she was descended of one of the ancientest families of Brussels. She told me the misfortune which reduced her to the necessity of leading the life she did; adding, that it was sore against her will, that she had pitch'd upon a course of life so contrary and derogatory to her birth. In a word, I found that courtezan so agreeable, that I promis'd to come and see her again the next day. I must shew you, then, said she, where I live; which is hard-by; but as for this place, I am only here by chance. Thereupon, I paid for what we had call'd in, and went, with her, to see where she lodg'd. Nor was far, from the place where I met her. Being come to the door, she press'd me to go in, for one moment, which I unfortunately agreed to. I found the rooms very handsomely furnish'd, and, therefore made no scruple to attend her to her chamber, where there was a good fire. As soon as I had enter'd the room, she desir'd me to sit down, and ordered the maid to bring up a bottle of Champagne. Far from supposing myself in the least danger, I was as easy as possible in that treacherous woman's company, when, all of a sudden, I heard, in the next chamber to that which we were in, a kind of confus'd noise of

men-

mens and womens voices together. Asking what could be the matter? my new mistress reply'd, shat it wa only two gentlewomen that lodg'd with her; and that as for the men, she suppos'd they were some friends come to see them. But alas! how far was this from Truth! and what a dreadful danger did I incur, in that execrable house! I never made a narrower escape in my life, than thence; for, soon after I had ask'd that She-devil, what men they were, five or six cut throats, disguis'd in seamen's habits, enter'd the chamber; and one of 'em coming up to me, ask'd me, in French, but in a very surly tone, What I did there? I answer'd *him*, trembling, that I came thither, only because that gentlewoman had invited me to walk in; and turning myself towards her, to desire her to witness what I said to be true, she had given me the slip, and was gone. This conv nced me, that I was betray'd, and that it now only remain'd for me, to recommend myself to God, and beseech him to deliver me out of the hands of these ruffians. And as, in my extreme confusion, I cry'd out aloud, O my God! the fellow that spoke French, said, with an air of insolence, This is not a place for thee to say thy prayers in; thou should'st have done that before thou had'st come hither, that he might have kept thee away; but

nov

that we have thee here, we ſhall make thee pay ſufficient import, before thou art exported. With that, all the villains fell upon me, ſome taking me by the hands, others, by my feet, and began to ſtrip me of all the cloaths on my back; after which, they each pull out a long knife, wherewith they deſign'd to murder me; but how great was God's goodneſs to me a miſerable ſinner! Juſt as they were going to commit that horrid deed, who ſhould burſt into the room, but the fair Chriſtina, who had deſerted ſome months before; who calling the ruffians aſide, whiſper'd ſomewhat to them, upon which they all quitted the room, and left her with me.

Tho' I had ſtill a great fear upon me in that dangerous houſe, yet I thought, I ſhould come to no harm, as long as Chriſtina was with me: Wherefore, plucking up a good heart, once again, the clouds of fear went off by degrees; and the ſooner, becauſe my quondam miſtreſs aſſur'd me, that for the future I might be very ſafe; for nobody there would now hurt a hair of my head. No ſooner, therefore, had I entirely recover'd myſelf, but I broke ſilence, and, addreſſing myſelf to my tutelar angel,——Is it you, ſaid I, my dear Chriſtina, that I find in this place, ſo unworthy your preſence? may I believe my eyes? Is it an illuſion, or a real truth?——

No;

No; 'tis no illusion, reply'd that charming woman; and but too true, to my sorrow! and to let you know, continu'd she, sighing, what has befallen me, that has not yet come to your knowledge, I must inform you, that about a fortnight after you had taken a house for me in the city, a German lord found an opportunity to become acquainted with me, and to declare to me the violent passion he had entertain'd in my behalf; assuring me, that if I would answer it, he would, at once, make my fortune, and render me happy as long as I liv'd. He told me, that he was an only son; had a considerable estate; and was entirely at his own disposal. I, too credulous, believ'd all that he was pleas'd to say to me; and the rather, because I saw, that he made a great figure. He kept his Valet-de-Chambre, and two footmen; and had already made me several valuable presents. Thus, upon the assurances he gave me, that I should be his wife, I resign'd myself up to his will and desires; and forgetting how much I was beholden to you, and the gratitude that was, consequently, due from me to you, I prov'd a traitor to your affection, abandon'd myself entirely to him, and, indeed, became desperately in love with him. Having the tenderness for him that I had, I made no difficulty of going with him to Hamburgh, which he said was the place of his birth; and

thi-

thither he pretended to carry me. The day of our departure was fix'd; I pack'd up all my goods, and ſet out from Utrecht, one afternoon, in a coach with four horſes. We lay that night, at a country houſe, belonging to a friend of my new ſpouſe's, about three leagues from Amſterdam. The next day, we arrived here before noon. My maid Nan was ſtill with me, being to attend me to Hamburgh. We were oblig'd to ſtay ſome time, at Amſterdam, by reaſon monſieur Baude (for that was my lord's name) had ſent home for ſome money, to lay out here. Mean time, I led the moſt agreeable life that could be, with that young gentleman, his love and affection for me was ſuch, as I can't poſſibly expreſs to you; but in ſhort, he us'd me like a queen, and could taſte no pleaſure but what he enjoy'd in my company. Thus had we been eleven days at Amſterdam, when, in the evening my ſpouſe fail'd of coming home at his uſual hour, which threw me into the moſt dreadful fright. My alarms increas'd proportionably as the night advanced; and I was the more uneaſy, becauſe he had left all his valets at home, whom I ſent to enquire at all the places which he frequented. But their perquiſitions were in vain. When I found that the night was far ſpent, and I could hear nothing of my ſpouſe, what dreadful apprehenſions came into my mind! the blackeſt

deſpair

despair and melancholy took possession of my soul! for I could no longer doubt, but some sad accident had befallen him. Thus I pass'd the rest of the night in the most cruel anguish of mind! As soon as 'twas day, I gave fresh orders to my footmen to go and look for their master, in all parts of the city; while I remain'd at home in continual alarms, for fear of receiving, every moment, some bad news of my dear spouse! and indeed, about two hours after the valets had been gone out, growing very sleepy, (for I had not shut my eyes together all night) I sat myself down in an easy chair, to take a little rest, and just as I began to forget my sorrow, a confus'd kind of noise, which happen'd in the street rowz'd me. Thereupon I flew to the window, and found a vast number of people got together, and in the midst of them one of your coaches drawn upon a sledge. I was very attentive on watching what would be the end of it, when I heard somebody behind me cry out, (whose voice I knew to be the valet-de-chambre's) Oh! madam! my master is murdered! and they have brought him home in his gore! Judge you now, said the fair Christina, in what a deplorable condition that piece of news put me! and into how deep despair it plunged me! I threw myself down stairs at a jump, and pushing thro' the crowd, with my hair about my ears, flung myself upon the body

body of my deceas'd ſpouſe, vainly imagining to fetch him to life, and make him ſpeak to me, by dint of cries and tears. All the endeavours of the men of the houſe to pull me away from him, prov'd fruitleſs; and thereupon, the crowd gather'd more and more: But, at laſt, being quite ſpent with ſorrow and weakneſs, I fell into a ſwoon upon the body of that unfortunate gentleman; and as it was not then difficult to take me away, they did ſo, and carry'd me to bed; where I lay three hours, without giving the leaſt ſymptoms of life, notwithſtanding all they could do to bring me and my ſenſes together again. However, as I did, at laſt, recover myſelf, they would not ſuffer me to go near the murder'd gentleman, but render'd me all the ſervice and conſolation they could. But of all the reſt, the valet de chambre beſtirr'd himſelf moſt, in aſſiſting to bring me to myſelf. To this end, he aſſur'd me, that tho' the loſs I had ſuſtain'd was very ſenſible and conſiderable, I ought, nevertheleſs, to conſider, that it was irretrievable; and, conſequently, ſhould endeavour to forget it, and take care not to ruin my health, by an exceſs of affliction: And the better to encourage me ſo to do, he thus went on;——You know, madam, that we expect, every day, the letters of exchange, which monſieur Baude had ſent for; you

muſt

muſt conſider too, that he has been unfortunately murder'd, without being able to convince you of the Intent he had to provide for you, ſo that he has left you nothing. And thus you ſee, that you muſt of neceſſity, at preſent, entertain other thoughts than thoſe of the death of our maſter, and contrive means to get in ſome money. If madam, you would take my ſilly advice in this affair, I dare flatter myſelf it would not be altogether unprofitable.——I muſt confeſs, (then ſaid the unfortunate milk-woman, breaking the thread of her diſcourſe) that tho' I was extremely afflicted, yet that man's words made ſome impreſſion upon my mind, and forced me to conſider, that the deceaſed had not left me very rich, but that on the contrary, my affairs were in a very indifferent ſituation. What would you have me do, then? anſwer'd I, with a languiſhing air. Do? reply'd the valet de chambre; why you muſt make uſe of a ſtratagem which I have invented; for otherwiſe, I don't ſee how you will come at the value of a braſs farthing. I can counterfeit my maſter's hand, continu'd he, ſo exactly, that nobody can diſtinguiſh his from mine; thus, I muſt make a deed of gift, whereby it will appear, that the deceaſed oliged himſelf in his life-time, in caſe God ſhould be pleas'd to call him to himſelf, before he had marry'd you, to leave you four

thousand crowns, and all the effects he had with him. I can do this with the better conscience, added he, because he told me several times, before he died, that he design'd so to do, and to marry you too, as soon as ever you were arriv'd at his house. The remittances he expected, amount to five thousand crowns. Now, you must be provided with the writing, which I am about to draw up, to the end you may make no more ado, but seize upon your sum. After this, you must make a very genteel burying for the deceased. Thus, continu'd Christina, I follow'd, in every thing, the valet de chambre's advice; and gave him the necessary orders to manage the funeral just as he pleas'd. Two days after, bills for the five thousand crowns arriving, I went immediately to receive 'em; and they paid me without the least scruple, or putting me to the trouble of producing the counterfeit deed. The obsequies were solemnized with great state and magnificence; and thus, after I had defray'd that expence, I had money enough left, without computing what I had before, which amounted to about five thousand two hundred florins, and to the value of above three thousand in jewels and other effects. Mean while, the valet de chambre gave me to understand, that if he had done me any service, it was not without having an eye to his own private interests;

for,

for, one day, he took his opportunity, when my maid was not at home, and I was alone in my chamber, to bespeak me in the following manner.

If, madam, the small services I have been able to render you, merit any acknowledgment, be not surprised, if I make bold to demand that, which will, no doubt, seem very sensible to you. Yes, madam, I aspire to the happiness of marrying you. You may be affronted at what I say, because you had before much higher views, as being design'd for my master, had not heaven snatch'd him from you by an untimely death; but, madam, let not that trouble you! I can affirm to you, without vanity, that my birth is not a whit inferior to his; and tho' you see me in this equipage, you may assure yourself, I took it upon me for no other reason, but that I had a great desire to see the world, without being obliged to spend so much money, as most gentlemen do, on that occasion. And indeed, madam, if you'll give yourself the trouble of reflecting a little upon the familiarity there was between me and my master, you will no longer doubt, but I am descended of a good family. 'Tis true, I cannot boast of being so plentifully provided with the goods of fortune, as he was; but I thank God, I have enough to maintain me genteely.

In a word, madam, you may perhaps make a more advantageous choice, than if you take me; and perhaps not. But (ſaid Chriſtina, once more interrupting the ſeries of her H ſtory) as you ſeem uneaſy, I'll detain you no longer, but tell you, in few words, the ſucceſs of our unfortunate adventure.——That villain (then continu'd ſhe) was ſo powerful and engaging in his expreſſions of tenderneſs and affection for me, and ſo often repeated his aſſurances of living with me till death ſhould part us; that, at laſt, I was quite hoodwink'd with the ſpecioufneſs of his fallacious promiſes, and conſented to marry him.

Accordingly, the very day after the banns had been thrice publiſh'd, our marriage was conſummated; and I was not a little pleas'd with my choice, till one day, that cheat having deſired me to take a walk with ſome young gentlewomen of his acquaintance, in order to divert ourſelves at a country houſe, not far off; why truly, when I came back again, my ſpouſe was run away, like a rogue, and had carry'd off all that I had in the world. You may eaſily imagine, (ſaid Chriſtina) how ſenſibly that blow affected me! I had like to have fallen under the burden of my grief, and had certainly given myſelf up to deſpair, and laid violent hands on myſelf, had not life been ſomewhat ſweeter to me than

than to part with it at that rate. And thus, my dear Rozelli, (concluded Christina) have I given you the reasons that obliged me to take to the course of life I now lead. In the first place, 'tis a just punishment of the injustice I was guilty of, in abandoning you, and so basely betraying your love: And thus heaven has brought us together in this place, that you might be a witness of the deserved chastisement I feel upon that score. In the second place, what plung'd me into this disorder, and forced me to be thus naughty, was, that when that villain had robb'd me, I knew not what to do, unless I took to this way of life. For the rest, God knows how gladly I would leave it, could I but get an opportunity to live without it. Well! then said I, dear Christina, if your sentiments are such as you profess them to be, I give you my word, I'll do what I can to assist you in so good a design, and furnish you with means sufficient to maintain you very genteely. Only tell me, where I may speak with you tomorrow, and at what time; but I assure you before-hand, that, as for this place, I am now resolved never to come to it again; and, therefore, you must think of some other rendezvous, where we will take the necessary measures to rid you of your troubles. Thereupon, she named an eating-house, which I pretended to

know

know very well; and having made a thousand protestations of friendship to her, I put my hand in my pocket, and pull'd out five ducats, which I gave her,——and there, dear Christina, said I to her, I leave you that as a pledge of my sincere intentions to meet you to-morrow. I would give you more, but that I have no more about me. Then I told her, that I would stay longer with her, but that I was obliged to go home, by reason it grew late; and so bidding her goodnight, away I went.

When, by God's assistance, I was got safe out of that house, (which was a harbour for cut-throats) and come into the street, finding myself benighted, my imagination began to trouble me again, and I fancy'd I could not be safe, so long as I was near that detestable part of the city. But as good luck would have it, I met, about a hundred yards from the door, one of the honest fellows that cry'd the hours of the night, who, as it happen'd, could speak a little French. I desir'd him to go home with me; and because he should not find out who I was, went all the by-ways I knew, and knock'd at my back-door. Then, having given the poor watchman somewhat to drink, I retir'd to my chamber, very well satisfy'd, that I had escap'd so great a danger. But far from going, the next day, to the place appointed

appointed, the very thoughts of what had paſs'd made me tremble; and during all the time that I afterwards liv'd at Amſterdam, I never had the curioſity to viſit that part of the city again. And this is all the account I can give you of my milk-woman, who ſtill thought, that I liv'd at Utrecht.

The very next day, Janine returned from the Hague, with the agreeable news, that ſhe had taken a houſe in the beſt part of the village, extremely well ſituated for our buſineſs; upon which I ſhook off the grievous melancholy that had conſumed me the night before. However, I was forced to tarry two months longer at Amſterdam, as well to wait the expiration of my leaſe there, as to get poſſeſſion of my houſe at the Hague.

During that interval of time, heaven took pity on me, and ſeeing I had always an empty coffee-room, eſtabliſhed my proſperity, in a very extraordinary manner. In a word, the ſmiles of providence upon that occaſion laid a ſolid foundation for my fortune, which has wonderfully mended upon't ever ſince. The affair was this: A certain prieſt, that came from the Indies, landing at Amſterdam, took lodgings in my houſe. He had not been there long, before he gave me to underſtand, that he took abundance of pleaſure in my converſation; and this induced

induced me to give him a relation of my principal adventures, and the reasons that engaged me to quit the monastical habit. Thus finding, that he was a very good man, and a great zealot for his religion, I attack'd him on his blind side, by assuring him, that notwithstanding all the indignities and affronts for which I was indebted to the ministers of the church of Rome; yet I still preserved my respect and affection for that holy religion, inviolable; and still continued in the profession thereof. This won me the old gentleman's heart; who, taking me for as great a bigot as himself, resolved to conceal nothing from me, but to make the confident of a certain merchandize, which he did not well understand himself. In a word, he shewed me a box full of gold dust. That sight made me simper upon the good priest; and having asked for a few ounces of it, which he readily gave me, I immediately went up to my closet, put 'em in a crucible, and carried e'm to a goldsmith's, desiring him to melt that matter for me, under pretence that I was going to try an experiment. As soon as it was melted, I poured it myself into an Ingot-mould; and, when 'twas cold, desired the goldsmith to give me his opinion of the metal. He took it, and hammer'd it, and try'd it upon his touch-stone; and then, smiling

ſmiling in my face, told me, that he wiſh'd he knew how to make ſuch an experiment. I aſſur'd him, that that could not be; but that if he would promiſe me to be diſcreet, I'd come often to his houſe, to melt down ſome of the ſame matte,, out of which he ſhould have his profit. Thereupon, he engaged moſt religiouſly to keep the ſecret. I paid him well for his trouble; and went out of his houſe, in order to return home. By the way, I computed with myſelf, and found, that, according to the quantity of duſt which the clergyman had given me, he had ſtill remaining in his box, to the value of above twelve thouſand florins. And as I knew very well, that that good man was very ignorant in the matter, I form'd the deſign of taking advantage of his ignorance, and cheating him.

The better to ſucceed therein, I reſolved to ſhew him a little of my skill in the art of deceiving, by perſuading him, that having made a moſt exact tryal what gold that duſt would produce, I found, that it was ſcarce worth the experiment; eſpecially conſidering, that I had carry'd it a great way off. I executed this matter, juſt as I had contriv'd it; and immediately upon my return home, told the prieſt, all that I had devis'd by the way.

Afterwards, I alarm'd his quarters, by

 beſpeaking

bespeaking him (with pretended demonstrations of friendship) in the manner following: My dear friend, I have, this moment, heard a piece of news, which very much troubles me, because of the most sincere and particular esteem, which, you know, I have for you. That is; that war is just declar'd between Holland and France; and I am not a little concern'd for you, not knowing how you will get out of this country. What adds to my fear is, is the consideration of the hazard you run, if you stay here any longer; so that 'tis time for you to think of retiring.

For the rest, you may rely upon me, and be persuaded, that I will do you what service I am able, in this and all other concerns. Bnt now, as you have given me to understand, that you are not well provided with money, I'll e'en venture to give you three hundred ducatoons upon your gold dust: I am very sensible, that I run a great hazard; and that I shall never be able to make my money of it again: But this I offer purely to render you a piece of service, without any regard to my private interest. Hereupon, he would let me go no farther, but interrupting me, cry'd out, for God's sake, dear Rozelli, Only help me to get out of this country, as soon as possible; and, as for the gold dust, you may give me what you please

for

for it; I ſhall think myſelf very happy, if I can but reach Antwerp; and, for the reſt, I know, you are an honeſt man, and let me go where I will, will ſend me word, if you ſhould happen to make more of the duſt. Ay, certainly, anſwer'd I to the prieſt; you need only let me know where you ſtop, and if I get more by that commodity, than I give for it, you ſhall ſurely have it. This ſaid, I ſpurr'd him on to pack up his goods as ſoon as he could; paid him the ſum agreed upon; and help'd him to a man that I could truſt, to conduct him to the frontiers. Afterwards, I accompany'd him myſelf to the Rotterdam bark, where having embraced him, and aſſur'd him of my inviolable friendſhip, I took my leave, and return'd home.

The only thing that now remain'd to reſtore a perfect tranquility to my mind, was the return of the guide, with the news of his having ſeen the prieſt as far as the frontiers. Nor did that uneaſineſs long perplex me. For while I was at dinner, the ſixth day after their ſetting out, who ſhould come in but the honeſt guide, who aſſur'd me he had ſeen the prieſt beyond Roſendael, where he had hired a peaſant's waggon to carry him to Antwerp. Ah! thinks I; is he thereabouts? why then I can no longer doubt but the box is mine; and my joy for

that conquest was inexpressible The next day, therefore I took two pounds of my gold dust, put it into a great crucible, and carry'd it to the goldsmith's to be melted. I had the precaution to mix another drug with it, the better to puzzle the goldsmith, and keep him ignorant. He had no sooner melted it, and poured it into the ingot-mould but he was struck dumb, and no longer doubted, but I was one of Hermes's bastards, and had the art of making gold. All my endeavours to beat that notion out of his head, prov'd fruitless; I could, by no means, undeceive him; but the more I deny'd his conjecture, the more he believ'd it to be true. Leaving him, therefore in his errour, and having, as before. paid him very well for his trouble, I went directly from his house to the Exchange, in order to find out a Jew to buy my gold. This was no hard task for me to perform; because the commodity I dealt in, was of too good an allay. In short, I agreed with one of those Israelites, who promis'd to buy my gold at the rate of forty florins an ounce, and offer'd to take as much as I should bring him. The Bargain thus struck, I provided myself, the next day, with a greater quantity of my dust, and went, as usual, to the goldsmith's. He had no sooner melted it, but seeing six pound of gold in a lump, he threw

threw himself upon his knees before me, and begg'd of me to have some regard for him, in consideration of his numerous family. I made him rise, and told him, that I would do what I could for him, which accordingly I did. Mean while, the goldsmith was highly offended with me, and resolved to play me a trick, which, however, would not do. On the contrary, he thereby lost what he might afterwards have gain'd by me; and so incurr'd the fate which generally attends ingratitude.

Mean while, as the time for my leaving Amsterdam, and coming to the Hague, drew on apace, I got all my gold-dust melted, (which yielded me 12,900 Florins) and having pack'd up all my effects, and sent them board a vessel, I set out from that famous city, leaving the gentlemen, who had been my persecutors, sufficiently sorry that ever they were so. However, it was not long, before they discover'd which way I came by my gold.

And this, dear reader, is the last of my adventures, which I thought so well worth thy curiosity, as to make public; and, therefore, with it I shall conclude this history.

Such, has been the course of my life, from my birth, even to this day. And I solemnly protest, that throughout the account I have given thee of it, I have neither

ther impos'd falſhood nor diſguiſe upon thee.

To conclude, if thoſe who read theſe memoirs, ſhall take warning by my misfortune, that's the only end I promiſe to myſelf in committing them to the preſs.

F I N I S.

In a few Days will be publish'd, No. I. *Price Two-pence, (to be continued weekly, till the Whole is compleated) containing Twelve Pages in large Quarto, beautifully printed, and stitch'd in Covers,*

THE LIFE OF OLIVER CROMWELL,

Lord-Protector of the Commonwealth of

ENGLAND, &c.

A Man of a very singular and uncommon Character, who made the greatest Figure during our late Troubles in *England*, *Scotland* and *Ireland*, and whose Life was filled with a Variety of great Actions both in War and Policy; who, from a private Gentleman of no considerable Fortune, (something like the famous *Thamas Kouli Kan*, the present *Persian* Monarch) raised himself to the highest pitch of Power and Grandeur.

To be comprized in One Volume.

To be had of the Persons who serve News and Subscription-Books.